



UNDEFEATED GOD OF WAR

BOOK 10

Fang Xiang

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Undefeated God of War

(不败战神)

by

Fang Xiang

(方想)

Synopsis

Youth, is meant to be used to shed sweat under the sun!

Youth, is to continuously engage in battles, and secure the win!

The endless journey on Heaven's Road, an endless expedition, a testimony of a hot-blooded youth's legend!

A dream every man harbors, with the ignition of the blood!
Forever young, Undefeated God of War!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Ting, BerrryBunz @ [Translation Nations](#)

Translation Edits by Robin, Leo and De Andre, and Boost Turtle
@ [Translation Nations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 901 - Why?

What a powerful Autumn Wind Offense!

Tang Tian's eyes lit up. The variations between every inch of space of the Autumn Wind Offense was breathtaking. In his eyes, the energy within the Qiu Offense Institute was one body, reeking of a decaying and bleak aura.

The decaying and bleak aura seemed to be able to pervade into people's hearts. When Tang Tian stood inside Autumn Wind Offense, the thousands of trees and leaves that flew emitted a faint cold intent that crept into his bones, causing him to tremble.

It was Tang Tian's first experience of such an attack, furthermore it was an Army Killing Technique. But for some reason, he had a faint sense of familiarity with it, as though he had seen it somewhere. He knew that he had not seen it before, if he had seen such a breathtaking army killing technique before, he would definitely not forget about it.

Gold Grade Army Killing technique, furthermore, it was an extremely unique Gold Grade Army Killing Technique. Compared to the [Light Sword Wail Song] that Tang Tian had experienced before, the [Autumn Wind Offense] was much stronger.

His pupils suddenly contracted, Laws!

That's right, there was a hint of laws in it!

Tang Tian then realized, No wonder I find it so familiar. Laws, inside the God Armor Army, Tang Tian was extremely sensitive towards laws, and although he was not inside the complete state of the God Armor Army at the moment, he still had an extremely sharp sense towards laws.

It was Tang Tian's first time witnessing an Army killing technique that contained Laws. Inside Sacred Saint Galaxy, where energy was in abundance, the Laws had been concealed by the

energy, thus gaining enlightenment of Laws was extremely difficult, far more difficult than in Sin Domain and Heaven's Road. That was why Tang Tian had never seen anyone else in Sacred Saint Galaxy that had gained enlightenment Laws.

So that's the case.....

Tang Tian's gleamed with a faint light aura, aside from the difficult, another reason why no one in Sacred Saint Galaxy had gained enlightenment on laws was because Sacred Saint Galaxy's style of fighting was through the tyranny of armies. Their style of gaining enlightenment on Laws is different from mine, although the military generals of Sacred Saint Galaxy are unable to gain enlightenment on Laws alone, but they are able to reach this point with their unique way.

Resonance!

The [Light Sword Wail Song]'s resonance was the resonance of energy, while the [Autumn Wind Offense] took it a step further, aside from the energy resonance, it had induced the undulations of Law Threads, and had assimilated it into the resonance. Energy was like the seawater, while the Law Threads were like the water plants at the bottom of the water. Ordinarily, the water surface would be choppy, while the depths of the sea was extremely quiet and still.

[Light Sword Wail Song] was like that, it looked to be extremely choppy with waves surging forth, but that was only on the surface.

[Autumn Wind Offense]'s resonance looked as though it could not compare to [Light Sword Wail Song]'s imposing power, but the undulations had spread to its depths, and had stirred the Law Threads at the floor of the ocean.

What an accidental find.

Tang Tian's initial high spirited of fighting intent had transformed into passion after encountering the powerful Army

Killing Technique. He placed his focus on his own body, What a strange feeling, it is completely different from when I am in the Awakened God Armor. Tang Tian felt as though he was in flames, but his mind and head felt like a block of ice.

Countless of thoughts flashed past his mind, while Tang Tian's hand never stopped moving.

He continued walking towards the Institute, and his right palm that looked like jade, continued to slash down, the speed at which he slashed became faster and faster.

The leaves dancing in the sky had no sign of lessening, when the palm aura closed in on the Qiu Offense Institute, it would dissipate due to the leaves.

Qiu Tian Qing's heart eased up greatly, the [Autumn Wind Offense] was always able to let him feel relieved.

He laughed at himself, Seems like I was stunned by the opponent previously, I actually acknowledged [Autumn Wind Offense] was unable to pose a threat to him subconsciously.

The opponent was extremely powerful, and was the strongest martial artist that Qiu Tian Qing had ever seen. But he had been too careless, he actually thought that he alone can defeat Qiu Offense Army.

A ferocious look flashed in Qiu Tian Qing's eyes, the current him who had entered his battle state had thrown all thoughts to the back of his mind, and the look in his eyes had turned cold.

How can there not be Autumn Rain when there is the Autumn Wind?

Qiu Tian Qing had forsaken all thoughts, all plots, his focus was at his front, he was just a pure military general, with his eyes on the battle ahead of him.

It was the strongest martial artist he had ever encountered in his life!

The opponent's individual strength had far exceeded what he had comprehended, All of those renowned powerful martial artists, and maybe even the rumored Boss of the Southern Alliance, is definitely weaker than this man.

Just like when Tang Tian witnessed Qiu Tian Qing's [Autumn Wind Offense] and had become overjoyed, it was the same for Qiu Tian Qing. The opponent that was unfathomable had aroused the unprecedented fighting intent in his heart.

"Autumn Wind and Rain decimation." Qiu Tian Qing's roar sounded across the entire Autumn Offense Institute.

Pa da pa da.

Bean sized droplets starting to fall, Tang Tian did not stop walking, every drop of rain contained compressed energy, and did not look fast, but every droplet held power.

With Tang Tian's perverse body, he did not feel any pain when the rain hit his body. Every drop contained a trace of the Autumn Offense intent, and permeated into Tang Tian's body.

Tang Tian was slightly moved, the variation was surprising. Ordinarily, people would incite the energy inside the raindrops to explode, and used that as a form of attack. But Qiu Tian Qing did not do that, but instead concealed the intent of his Qiu Offense Technique inside the energy, and allowed the raindrops of energy to attack the opponent's defense, and allowed the intent to permeate into the enemy's body.

Tang Tian immediately sensed that his mental state had turned slightly sluggish the moment the intent entered his body, causing his heart to tremble. The radiance inside the glass like mental state was vigorous, while the undying sword in his body was buzzing restlessly, like a furious anger, causing the Autumn Offense Intent inside Tang Tian's body to immediately dissipate.

The Intent can actually be used in such a way!

Tang Tian's eyes lit up again. If not for Tang Tian's different style of fighting compared to the martial artists of Sacred Saint Galaxy, along with his unmatched intuition, the [Autumn Wind and Rain Decimation] might had killed him.

Sensing the restless Undying Sword in his body, Tang Tian summoned it out without hesitation.

When the cracked Bronze sword appeared in Tang Tian's hands, his pupils suddenly turned bronze in color, with a faintly visible cross sign in it.

A solemn and stirring aura surged into the sky, causing the atmosphere around him to form ripples.

The rain dropped on Tang Tian's body, but he remained passive about it. The [Autumn Wind and Rain Decimation] became the best backdrop for him, adding to the solemn atmosphere.

What is that!

Qiu Tian Qing's eyes dilated as he stared at the bronze sword in Tang Tian's hands.

The strange jade looking hand and the cracked bronze sword had a huge contrast.

What made his heart beat even faster was the sense of solemnness, it was as if he could see countless of silhouettes pouncing towards their enemies without second thoughts, with the intent to kill the enemies, to burn with all of them!

That is an army, that is a weapon that contains the mark of an army! How is there such a weapon in the world? What kind of army is willing to use their deaths, to forge such a terrifying weapon?

For a weapon that has the mark of an army to fall in the hands of an individual martial artist, what a pity.

Shock, disbelief with a bit of fascination, a lot of pity, but the

most of all, was fear, the fear of death.

Facing the man who had raised the bronze sword, all of the hairs on Qiu Tian Qing's body stood, as though a ferocious beast was staring at him. He knew that this feeling meant that he was about to face an unprecedented danger, an intense danger.

"Autumn! Autumn! Autumn!"

Qiu Tian Qing's veins popped out as he roared with all of his might.

The soldiers around him had become equally fanatical, and roared in unison: "Attack! Attack! Attack!"

The rain around Tang Tian suddenly disappeared, as though an invisible hand had gathered all the rain, and formed them together, irrigating the flood towards the Qiu Offense Institute. The dancing leaves did not fly fast, like a school of fish swimming leisurely, but they were still quietly degenerating things around them.

The middle aged man who was spectating from the side had a look of surprise, he knew that Qiu Tian Qing would have to fight for his life.

On the trading ship, Ah Xin stared at the cracked Bronze Sword in Tang Tian's hand, and his body started to tremble.

By the side, Xiao Man immediately asked: "What's wrong with you?"

She had sensed something different previously, as though Ah Xin was been pulled into a weird trance by the sword summoned by Tang Tian, She knew that although Ah Xin was usually goofy and enjoyed chatting aimlessly, but he was an extremely calm and confident person, and his state of mind was much better than hers.

Ah Xin's face was pale white, his trembles started to become more violent. His legs were shaking, fingers were shaking, his lips were trembling, only his eyes were fixed straight at the bronze

sword, as though he had not heard of Xiao Man's words.

That aura of my comrades, that aura of death, that aura from the Ocean of Peace, he had roughly guessed the background of the sword, but....

Why are they so unhappy?

Why are they in grief?

Why do I feel like crying?

What happened to the Ocean of Peace? Seniors, Brothers, why are all of you not at rest? Why?

Ah Xin's body was trembling, that's right, he had never trembled before, even in the previous battle, he had rushed out from the grave to strike at the enemy without trembling or hesitation.

They were from

/> They were from the Ocean of Peace, where all of his comrades lay in peace, regardless of how intense the battle was, it is the final land for them to be happy. Their spirits will return to the Ocean of Peace to rest in peace forever. It is the land where their final worries lay, the land for their final battle. The companions still alive could die, but their comrades would rest in peace forever.

Why must you wake them?

Why!

Ah Xin's fist was clenched so tight that they turned red, he had unknowingly lowered his head, his face was sinister while his body trembled incessantly.

Why did you agitate them! Why!

Because you need people to go to war for you? I will go to war for you! You want to send people to die? I will go in place of them! Why must you call them? Why can't you let the dead rest?

A sudden bronze light aura suddenly lit up and penetrated

through the window, shining on Ah Xin's sinister face, the pain was so clear, so clear that it caused Xiao Man's heart to ache.

The sword body was buzzing with a low sound, like a surging tide of water, the sound became louder and louder.

This sound.....

Ah Xin's body jolted, he subconsciously raised his head.

The bronze sword that was raised up high, looked like the Southern Cross Army war flag that was being raised.

The low sword hum sounded as if a million soldiers were shouting in unison, their anger, their dissatisfaction, their sorrow.

Tang Tian looked as though he was possessed, the low resounding sword hum caused his entire body to tremble incessantly, the Ocean of Peace appeared in his mind, and the unforgettable scene occurred.

Waves after waves of people from the Ocean of Peace struck onto the barrier in the sky as they sacrificed themselves.

The endless injured and cracked faces looked as though they were broken pieces of porcelain glued back together.

The battle exchanged for a century of sleep that repeated itself four ten thousand of years, along with the sentence: "One hundred years later, we will fight with you!"

Tang Tian's body trembled, the furious roars from the Ocean of Peace resonated in his ears, the dissatisfied looks on the porcelain faces caused the battle intent in his body to surge like lava, spewing all over his body.

From the backlighting, figures rushed forward, as sword hums filled the air and accompanied Tang Tian as he roared.

"Without knowing whether our army is dead or alive, how can we rest in peace!"

Inside the window of the trading ship, Ah Xin looked as though

he was struck by lightning.

Chapter 902 - The Light of the Past, Will Shine for the Present You

When Tang Tian raised the Undying Sword, the low sword hum seemed as though it was replying him, as it revolved around him in a flow.

Tang Tian was moved!

Ever since he gained enlightenment on the Awakening God Armor, he was used to the absolute coolness in battle. But, when the sword hummed, all of the calmness and steadiness was thrown away as an indescribable emotion flooded his entire body.

Tang Tian had never seen such an army before, he had never seen such spirits before, such conviction.

How glorious is it to be able to fight alongside such conviction!

How can we rest in peace! How can we rest in peace!

Tang Tian's roar resonated through the sky, the low sword hums reacted to him and roared along with him, following his emotions and roar, as though they were getting off the million years of accumulated dissatisfaction and rage, as though they wanted to shatter the calm surface of the Ocean of Peace, as though they wanted to shatter their own place of sanctuary.

How can we rest in peace! How can we rest in peace!

These were the spirits that had shattered themselves over a hundred times through the thousands of years, just for the almost bleak and dark hope. They had given up on resting in peace, they endured through the century of silence, just for one opportunity that did not even seem to have the optimism for victory. They ignited all of their light to the point of destroying themselves, covered with all sorts of wounds, they slept in the darkness, waiting for the chance to be awakened a hundred years later.

The ten thousand years of darkness, despair, and bitter struggles was the smoke that they could not penetrate through. All of the solemn cries were not because of victory, but because they cared about the Southern Cross Army Flag that had always been in their hearts.

When Tang Tian raised the sword up high and shouted "Without knowing whether our army is dead or alive, how can we rest in peace!", the Undying Sword resonated through the entire sky, the clouds were dispersed, the energy between the sky and earth were stirred as they surged towards Tang Tian!

Tang Tian was like a huge vortex, as streaks of light shot towards him from all directions, bringing forth heart palpitating shrieks.

The ear piercing sounds of the energy beams cutting through the air increased, the Undying Swords' resonance became even more low and tragic. All of these mixed together caused Tang Tian's body to tremble uncontrollably.

He heard the resentment from the millions of officers and soldiers, he heard their brave attacks on the barrier in the sky, like moths attracted to the flame, he heard the emotions of a general who had cracks all over his face, the disappointment and defeat in his heart, the endless silence amongst the shattered porcelain soldiers, the darkness and silence of the Ocean of Peace, the endless defeats and the centuries of slumber, the deep love towards the army in which he did not know whether it still existed, the general roared with all of his might, garnering the morale of the soldiers, telling them to meet after a century, telling them to fight alongside each other after a century.

The flow of time always washed away the passion in the blood.

The old general was no longer staunch and brave, he did not proclaim victory or success, but only said to fight alongside each other after the century. The old general was no longer staunch and brave, they remained silent, they felt a sense of loss, after the

century, they could only leap out of the Ocean of Peace and attack the barrier in the sky, only shouting out the same phrase "Without knowing whether our army is alive or dead, how can I rest in peace", and shatter.

The solitude and grief inside the vast Ocean of Peace flooded Tang Tian's heart, but, there was also the determination and fiery passion that was as vast, that combusted in Tang Tian's heart.

The sky seemed to have suddenly dimmed down, desolation pervaded through the air, beneath Tang Tian's feet, a clear and crystalline gleaming reflection appeared, the black ocean stretched out as far as anyone could see, it was the Ocean of Peace.

Tang Tian stood on the Ocean of Peace, his body seemed to be burning, but his pupils held a complicated look.

The Undying Sword that was raised up high, was placed in front of his chest, the words on the sword reflected into his eyes.

"No need for protection, rest in peace."

He muttered gently, he then lowered the sword down and waved the sword.

The calm Ocean beneath his feet seemed to be stirred, the waves got larger and larger.

It was as though it had telepathic powers, Tang Tian suddenly stepped forward, his clothes rustled despite no wind, the waves beneath his feet instantly erupted, yet he remained indifferent, his gaze was focused as he turned his wrist, stabbing out into the air with the Undying Sword.

The Ocean of Peace was stirred, figures started to appear on the water surface, all of them were blurred, like figures in the mist with only their human outlines visible. He looked up, as though he was looking at the sky, and then leapt up, transforming into a beam of sword light as he soared through the air, the sword whistled deeply and vigorously, it was forceful and fervent as it

rushed towards Qiu Offense Institute.

Bang bang bang!

One after another, the figures transformed into sword lights and soared into the sky.

Qiu Tian Qing had already positioned his troops and were in wait, he knew that the opponent was strong, but he did not think that he had no chance at all. He praised the obsession and profoundness of the sword, as it was a true Mythical Army Weapon. Its' might far surpassed that of any sword techniques, causing Qiu Tian Qing to be shocked.

But, he did not plan to be captured without doing anything. No matter how powerful the sword was, it was still one sword. No matter how powerful the individual was, he was still one man.

The Sacred Saint Galaxy had used countless of ways to prove that the tyranny of Armies were still the strongest.

Qiu Tian Qing watched the sword lights shrieking down, filled with solemn and grief, causing him to be emotionally moved, but so what!

His Qiu Offense Army had already completed preparations, Qiu Tian Qing's fighting intent blazed in his eyes, his mouth revealing a cold sneer.

Inside the Institute, autumn frost had covered the floor, as though there was a thin layer of snow. A faint mist, that looked to be of another world, pervaded the Institute from the ground. The energy barrier was withdrawn, while the mist lingered along the walls of the Institute, gradually pervading outwards, like gray vines curling all around, as well as a white wall of mist. Very quickly, the surrounding walls of Qiu Offense Institute was completely enveloped by the mist.

[Autumn Frost Cold Field].

The Qiu Offense Army's strongest Killing technique.

The solemn and gloomy sword light brought forth shrieking and whistling screams, along with dazzling brilliance and struck into the mist outside the walls of Qiu Offense Institute.

Bang!

The sword lights suddenly exploded, the shattered aura that had dissipated looked like fireworks over the Ocean of Peace.

Qiu Tian Qing did not expect for the sword lights to explode, and jumped in surprise. The sword lights explosions caused a hole to form in the mist, but even more mist floated over, and immediately covered up the hole.

He calmed down, the sword auras might looked imposing, but their might was just slightly stronger than ordinary warship weapons. If they were still using the energy barrier, they would most likely only be able to sustain a few attacks, but if they wished to destroy the [Autumn Frost Cold Field], the attacks were far from sufficient.

The explosions sounded like the start of a banquet feast.

Bang bang bang!

Sword auras fell like rain. Continuously striking on the Qiu Offense Institute's mist.

The shattered auras from the explosions were not affected by the flow of air, sprinkling around like bright colored snowflakes.

Qiu Offense Institute's mist raged on, as though a terrifying creature lived within it. Every explosion of the sword aura would form a hole in the mist. But in the blink of the eye, the hole would be occupied by mist again.

It seemed as though the mist from Qiu Offense Institute was endless.

But the number of sword lights from the Ocean of Peace was also endless.

In the distance, the middle aged man's complexion was as white as paper. The battle in front of front of him had completely toppled his knowledge. [Autumn Wind Offense] was Qiu Offense Institute's Army Killing Technique, he naturally recognized it, But what is that strange mist? Could it be the true killing technique of their army?

He understood a thing or two about the Qiu Offense Army's attacks, but with regards to the masked man's attacks, he was completely baffled. That's right, baffled. The bizarre hand that caused people's heart to tremble that even the [Autumn Wind Offense] could not defeat was something he had never heard of before. And that strange black ocean, where did it come from? Is it an illusion? The sword lights that shot out from the sea was even more shocking to him.

There was a piece of broken sword light aura that did not fall into the mists and landed on the ground. Then he saw with his own eyes how it silently destroyed a large area more than two hundred meters in diameter.

The middle aged man was dumbstruck, it was just a piece of shattered aura, it looked like a snowflake, but he was surprised that it could completely destroy the city in front of him.

Who is that guy?

The sword lights that dropped from the sky like rain shone on Ah Xin's face, revealing his sunken eyes, his bitter and self ridicule laughter.

Yes, I have been too dumb, all of them in the Ocean of Peace will never live calmly, what's more, there are so many of you.

But.....

~No need for your protection, rest in peace."

~You guys... why? Why did you give up? Why did you give up the resting place that we fought so hard to achieve? Have all of you

forgotten? For that resting place, how much we had to pay, the difficulty we went through? Have all of you forgotten, the war is for the living, while all of you just have to rest in peace?~

What else can't you let go off? What else is there?

Without knowing if the army is dead or alive, how can you rest in peace?

It is truly compatible with all of your stupid personalities!

A bitter smile spread from the corner of his mouth, and spread to his face, he could not help but laugh as he laughed out loud, to the point that he had to bend his back and knelt on the ground.

You old fogeys, hahahaha, you're still the same! To the point that you guys are so diligent in trampling over the Ocean of Peace? After being dead for so long, you guys can still talk about having nothing to do and worrying about us?

Hahahaha, I am equally stupid, I have died for a long time too.

He laughed while kneeling on the ground, to the point that tears started falling. Ah Xin felt that he had been too dumb, crying over the fact that they gave up on their final resting place. Ocean of Peace is such Peace is such a good place, and we took great effort to be successful in it, all of you don't know how to cherish it at all.

Do you know how much you have all wasted? Do you know how much effort have gone down the drain?

All of you are so stupid, and here I was, worrying about all of you, seems like I am even dumber... hahahahahaha....sob sob sob.....

He laughed and laughed, until he started crying. His crying got louder, as he knelt on the ground and wailed to the point that mucus and tears started to fall.

How can you rest in peace? Just rest in peace! All of you idiots don't know how to rest in peace, isn't it because you just want to gamble daily? Those that have lost to me before on the gambling

table, come out and show yourselves, don't think I have forgotten all of you. It is because there isn't an expert like me to monopolize the table that all of you are able to hold onto your dignity and completely neglect on food and rest, that's why all of you are unable to rest in peace, am I right?

Do you know how lonely and unbearable is it for one person to spend thousands of years by himself? Do you know how boring it is to bring skeletons along to go about fighting? I was bored to the point of talking to myself, to the point that I recalled every single stale gossip that all of us talked about? Do you know that I can even remember which hands you guys use to wipe your butts with tissue paper?

Don't let me meet you guys, otherwise, I will make sure every single one of you recall all the gossip in the past, hahahaha.....sob sob sob.....

Do you know how terrified I have been for the past thousands of years? Afraid that I would forget who I am, forget about the army, forget about all of you, afraid that if I met all of you, I wouldn't remember who all of you are?

Hahahaha, but I still remember all of you, I still do!It is not that I don't miss you guys, it is not that I don't want to join you....it is just....that I was afraid of being ashamed, being awkward.... That's true.

In any case, all of you can't beat me in card games. All of you should remember how good my memory is.

Sob sob sob, I miss all of you.

From his kneeling position, he laid on the ground, crying and laughing like a maniac.

Xiao Man wanted to move to him, but Qian Hui stopped her, and shook her head. Xiao Man bit her lips, the usual ferocity in her eyes had disappeared.

The sword lights that resembled rain outside the winder, were like the lights of memories of the past that shone on Ah Xin, who had survived till ten thousand years later.

Chapter 903 - Sophie's Return

Qiu Tian Qing was calm from the start, although the opponent's attack was extremely fierce, their [Autumn Frost Cold Field] was no simple technique either. He was extremely confident of [Autumn Frost Cold Field], despite the fact that it was their first time utilising it since its creation.

Because [Autumn Frost Cold Field] was completely different from all other Army Killing Techniques.

Laws!

The sole reason of why it was completely different from other army killing techniques was because [Autumn Frost Cold Field] contained the Laws of Autumn. In essence, [Autumn Frost Cold Field] had already surpassed the category of Army Killing Techniques.

It took him fifteen years to grind out this technique.

When Qiu Tian Qing had created the [Autumn Wind Offense], he had always pondered upon how to create an Army Killing Technique stronger than the [Autumn Wind Offense].

This thought lasted for a decade.

And then, an insight occurred, allowing him to gain enlightenment. But, it was just the start, as an Army Killing Technique was not something a military general alone could complete. He spent another five years, where he and his subordinates continued to perfect the technique, ultimately creating the strongest killing technique, [Autumn Frost Cold Field]!

Once [Autumn Frost Cold Field] was activated, the land where the army stood would have Autumn Laws activated, forming a unique land of Autumn. The land of Autumn formed an entity that could constantly provide energy, the autumn frost would

transform into mist, becoming endless and boundless.

Compared to an individual martial technique, an Army Killing technique was complicated. It was difficult for the generals and soldiers to gain enlightenment on Laws, thus the requirements for the killing technique became even more difficult, but once it was completed, the might of it would far surpass anything imaginable.

Tang Tian quickly realized that he had made a mistake in his judgement.

The Laws in the [Autumn Frost Cold Field] not only formed Law Threads, but Law Surface! Furthermore, it was not just any Law Surface, the Autumn Laws embedded inside this space already had signs of forming a Law Domain. For example, its self regeneration, this was the most common specialty of Law Domains.

Half step into Law Domain!

There was another person who was able to recognize this fact aside from Tang Tian, and that was Ji Ze. The people in God Armor Army were all rather ordinary in terms of aptitude, including Fu Zheng Zhi, whose strength was rather outstanding except for his large age gap. Out of all of these people, the only one who could be hailed as a genius was Ji Ze,

At the start, Ji Ze looked on the Qiu Offense Institute with disdain and spite, but when the mist blocked the sword light, his face became serious. Very quickly, this seriousness turned into surprise, which ended up as though he had seen a ghost.

Am I truly seeing ghosts!

Ji Ze could not believe his eyes, What joke is this! They are half step into Law Domain!

Even in Sin Domain, there was only one man who had gained enlightenment on Law Domain, and that was how Du Ke became the publicly recognized number one in Sin Domain.

In truth, ever since Ji Ze had entered the Sacred Saint Galaxy, he

looked down on all the military generals of the armies. Not a single person had gained enlightenment on Laws. Laws and Energy were two completely different levels of power.

Before he got used to using Laws to control energy, he was extremely weak. But, once he broke through the barrier, his strength would erupt overnight. One could say that there is a thin piece of paper between Laws and Energy, whereby the paper would be extremely thin when moving from Laws to Energy, but from Energy to Laws, the piece of paper would be extremely thick.

Thus, his eyes towards the military generals of Sacred Saint Galaxy had always been one of arrogance.

But, it was the army that he looked down on that actually gained enlightenment on Laws, and could even form a unique space of their own like a Law Domain. How could that not shock him?

He had not expected to see a half step Law Domain that could only be wielded by the powerful martial artists who stood at the peak in the Sacred Saint Galaxy.

But like how Tang Tian had underestimated the [Autumn Frost Cold Field], Qiu Tian Qing likewise had underestimated the Undying Sword. The endless storm of Sword lights caused Qiu Tian Qing's emotional look to become serious.

After five minutes, the sword lights never revealed any signs of depletion.

What technique is that?

How can one man sustain such a strong offense for so long?

This is a warship grade attack, regardless of the might of the sword light or the frequency of the attack, they are all of the warship grade! Furthermore, it is at the gold grade warship level!

Just like how Ji Ze felt as though he had seen a ghost when he saw the army of Sacred Saint Galaxy being able to attain the level of half step Law Domain, Qiu Tian Qing was feeling the same. In

the world of the Sacred Saint Galaxy where Armies ruled, to see an individual's strength being comparable to a warship was no different from seeing a ghost.

To the majority of the armies, fighting with a warship and fighting without a warship was a difference of heaven and earth.

If an army without a warship was able to unleash an attack that was comparable to one with a warship, they could be considered elite. But for an individual to do it.....doesn't that make him a human sized warship? How can there be such a person in the world?

The might of a warship was extremely huge, along with its durable defense, but its usage was limited, for example there were the estuary limitations, or its rigidness in small scale wars. The battlefield of warships usually occurred in the vast Sea of Energy.

But....a human sized warship....that's too terrifying! It will be unimpeded by terrain, it would be extremely agile, able to launch ambush attacks that had the power comparable to warships.

This is the Ultimate Weapon.

Previously, Qiu Tian Qing suspected that the other party had disguised himself as one of the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights, but after seeing Tang Tian's attacks, he figured that Tang Tian had to come from Temple. Qiu Tian Qing firmly believed that only Temple had the means to be able to groom such a beast.

Luckily, the [Autumn Frost Cold Field] remained unharmed, allowing him to heave a sigh of relief. But the rage in his heart soared.

Temple wants to destroy my Qiu Family!

Then come, you truly think that the Qiu Family is a pushover?

The middle aged man watching from afar had a change in expression, he and Qiu Tian Qing had the same thoughts. To be able to groom the perfect warship martial artist, he was definitely

Temple's final trump card!

If the Qiu Family was truly destroyed by Temple, Temple would be able to showcase their strength through the battle, how many people would still dare to go against them? At that time, the alliance between the Prestigious Families would crumble.

An intense fear filled his heart, they had already shot the arrow and could no longer take it back. They were too familiar with Temple's style of handling matters, even if the matter were to be appeased temporarily, the moment the situation stabilizes would be the time the Qiu Family had to repay the debt, they could not run away.

The middle aged man composed himself, a strict look flashed past his eyes as he called for the bodyguard next to him, and gave him some orders softly.

The bodyguard's face became serious as he nodded, then turned and flew away.

Sophie stood outside Temple's doors, from inside the majestic big doors, white light emitted out from out from the dense radiant energy, as though inside of the Palace was a completely different world.

She stood there, facing the doors like a statue, and did not speak a word.

She had been in and out of the place countless of times, it was her home, and the place she was most familiar with that had the people that she was most familiar with. The big doors were still as majestic, the white light was still as dense, yet the people that she was most familiar with were not present.

Sophie's return surprised all of the Clan Elders.

When Sophie stepped into Temple, what welcomed her were the complicated gazes from the Clan Elders. She knew what they were

thinking, but she did not care about them, since when did their life matter to her?

She acted as though she did not see the Clan Elders, holding onto the sword on her waist, she slowly walked deeper into Temple without saying a word. Halfway through, she spoke out: "Which Chamber Hall was His Highness assassinated in?"

One of the sharp witted clan elder immediately replied: "It was the Sunset Chamber."

Sophie nodded her head, then changed her direction, towards the Sunset Chamber.

The Clan Elders watched her leave, then continued to discuss amongst themselves.

"She is too impulsive, she actually dares to purge the Qiu Family's encampment, wouldn't it incite even more conflict?"

"Sigh, you can't blame her, she and His Highness Charles have an extremely deep relation with each other. Upon hearing that he was assassinated, how could she not lose control? Truthfully, those families are too wild, they have become arrogant and daring, we should have handled them earlier, it was truly nurturing a tiger that invites calamity."

"Hey, be careful of what you say! The walls have ears. This is a group of maniacs that even dared to assassinate His Highness, you think they will put us in their eyes?"

"What are you afraid of! The Banner of Knights are already here, if they dare to come, they are seeking death!"

"That's right, the Banner of Knights have returned, I can sleep in peace."

.....

Sophie stood outside the Sunset Chamber's door. The matter at the Sunset Chamber was extremely serious, and the entire place

had been searched and investigated countless of times, even the ground was dug a few inches, turning the place into a mess.

She stood outside the door quietly, but did not enter.

Inside Temple, the Clan Elders were in small groups discussing amongst themselves, their gazes would occasionally turn towards the deeper part of Temple.

"She's still at Sunset Chamber's entrance? It's already been two already been two hours!"

"She's hurt, the one who died was his Highness!"

All sorts of discussions could be heard, as none of the Clan Elders had left. They stayed in the largest area of Temple, awaiting for the latest news.

The Great Clan Elder did not express any approach towards Sophie's purge of the Qiu Family's camp. The Great Clan Elder did not even utter a word when Sacred Son Charles was assassinated.

They knew that the Great Clan Elder was waiting for Sophie's return.

Suddenly, the clan elders became restless, news had spread that Sophie had left the Sunset Chamber and headed to the Radiant Chamber. The Clan Elders became anxious, once the Great Clan Elder spoke, the approach and standing of Temple would immediately be fixed.

Not only were the Clan Elders anxious, even the Prestigious families who had received the news became anxious. The Great Clan Elder was the true peak existence of Temple.

If he said to fight, the entire Temple would disregard everything and go into battle, no matter how much it cost, how many sacrifice were needed, Temple would fight till the end. If the Great Clan Elder said for peace, then no matter how intense the battles previously were, no matter how furious the people were, Temple had to get together with the other party.

Sophie walked to Radiance Chamber's entrance and knelt down. Her shoulders twitched, as tears flowed down uncontrollably. She was sprawled on the ground, tears falling all over, she was so sad that she had become weak.

"It's been tough on you, child. Just cry it out, don't hold it in."

A gentle voice came out from above her head, causing her heart to feel even more terrible, she wailed out uncontrollably.

The Great Clan Elder sighed, then caressed Sophie's head.

The Great Clan Elder's palm was enveloped by golden Holy Flame, it did not have any warmth, and only had the power to calm the heart.

Sophie's mood gradually stabilized, her eyes were red as she plead guilty to the Great Clan Elder: "This subordinate did not receive any orders, and took it on my own accord to attack the Qiu Family, I have caused bad effects, requesting Clan Elder to bestow punishment!"

"Why should I punish you?" The soft yet powerful voice sounded from within the blazing Holy Flame. Great Clan Elder's voice contained an unconcealable rage: "They think that they can make me compromise? They are wrong! I would rather Temple be destroyed than to compromise with them!"

"I want them to realize how much they have overestimated themselves!"

The entire Temple started to hum, causing everything to tremble.

Chapter 904 - Ah Xin Requests to Battle

The storm of sword lights continued for a full ten minutes, and after the last sword light shattered, the entire world seemed to have suddenly quieted down.

The dazzling shattered auras lit up the Ocean of Peace, the deadly beauty had become extremely calm. Unknowingly, everyone had held onto their breaths, afraid that they would break the silence.

Only Qiu Tian Qing's pupils were constricted, he had sensed danger.

The aura had changed slightly, it was obviously peaceful and calm, however, for some reason, Qiu Tian Qing's sense towards danger had not lessen, but instead increased. Qiu Tian Qing knew that something was wrong. He looked around carefully, but did not notice anything out of the ordinary, the Ocean of Peace waves were calm, the surface of the water was bright and clean, resembling a black mirror.

The unease in Qiu Tian Qing's heart became even more intense.

Inside the trading ship, Ah Xin wiped away the tears from his eyes, he stood up, as though nothing had happened.

Regardless if it is being moved or hurt, regardless if it is a longing or a hope, these feelings are for oneself, not for others, and not for others to know, everything that one feels, should always be for oneself, for the true longing in one's heart.

Aside from Qian Hui and Xiao Man, no one knew that inside the trading ship in the distance, there was an old young man that had lost his voice while crying bitterly. Even if they knew, they might not be able to understand, ten thousand years was simply too long, too long that one could witness the transformations of the world, too long that things might have remained the same, yet the people had changed, so long that promises could be destroyed.

Who would be so idle? One would already have his hands full with one life, how could they tolerate so many years.

An old monster that had experienced ten thousand years, with the grief and emotions that went on and on, if Bing and Screw were to know about it, who knew if they could accept it.

Upon thinking about how his devastated appearance had been witnessed by the busty lady with the blade, Ah Xin felt sad. It's over, it's over, I will be ridiculed by her, I wonder when will I be able to gain back my image.

How can the busty lady ever understand such delicate emotions, he mourned in his heart. Sigh, how will I ever show my face in front of her from now on? Such a headache.

All of these thoughts went through his mind, but his heart calmed down.

He suddenly bowed respectfully to Qian Hui: "This subordinate requests to go to battle!"

The obsession of his former comrades were present in front of him, all of them had wasted the precious Ocean of Peace, causing him to have the urge to beat them up.

Qian Hui did not say anything, but looked straight at Ah Xin earnestly.

Ah Xin had a bright smile that resembled the sun, with a slightly frivolous and anticipated look, without a trace of sorrow.

Although the Ah Xin in front of her looked not much different from how he was ordinarily, Qian Hui could feel that he was serious and longing to go to battle. Ah Xin and Xiao Man were Qian Hui's right hand and left hands, and she understood them very well. Xiao Man loved to fight, but Ah Xin did not have any passion or excitement towards battle, if he did not have to fight, he would not fight. If he could spend 10 minutes to resolve a battle, he would never spend 20.

It was the first time he had initiated to go to battle.

After thinking about how Ah Xin had cried and wailed previously, Qian Hui did not hesitate: "Alright!"

"Thank you, young miss!" Ah Xin bowed respectfully to Qian Hui.

When they had first met, he was defeated and held hostage by Qian Hui, before choosing to join her as a subordinate, but willingness was out of the question. Qian Hui's standard in controlling a battle earned his respect, but it was not enough for him to surrender his loyalty, it was just that he did not want to disappear from the world.

I have already lived for so long, before finding the answer, dying is not worth it.

That led to a common occurrence where he would do his job, but would not put effort, and compared to Xiao Man, he was not qualified at all. But what surprised him was that Qian Hui was never unhappy with him because of it.

Qian Hui was firm and independent, she had her own view point, and practically ignored his irresponsibility.

Xiao Man frequently found trouble with him was most probably because of that. The difference between them was that Xiao Man was loyal to Qian Hui.

When he thought about that, he felt embarrassed. He never thought that when he requested to go to battle, Qian Hui would actually agree instantly. Ah Xin understood that regardless of what reason it was, the understanding itself was something rare to see.

His gratitude to her was from the bottom of his heart.

Xiao Man's face turned cold, she snorted: "If you throw our face in front of our in-law, you can just slit your own throat."

Qian Hui, who stood there coldly like a Goddess of War right from the start, had her face flush red upon hearing what Xiao Man

said, she glanced at Xiao Man, but did not say a word.

Ah Xin laughed out loud, upon thinking about showing off his noble aspirations, he was interrupted by Xiao Man: "If you want to go, then go, stop dawdling!"

Ah Xin's laugh was cut short, he then cleared his throat.

Suddenly, a thunderous roar exploded out from the distance: "To actually dare go against the rules of the Holy Bell in Saint Continent, and to attack the Prestigious Qiu Family. Still trying to act sneakily, why are you not surrendering yourselves!"

An army that looked like fiery clouds flew over.

The generals and soldiers of the army were donned in furious red capes, all of their expressions were cold and indifferent, and anyone could tell from one look that they were warriors that had gone through hundreds of battles. The military general in the lead had a robust and domineering body, with a squarish face and thick eyebrows, the most prominent part about him was his fiery red hair.

Red light flashed in the sky, as though meteors were soaring down from space.

Bang!

The sky about 300m away from Tang Tian suddenly exploded, with fiery serpents dancing all around. When the fiery light dissipated, the army appeared, revealing their true faces.

"General Qiu!" The robust man in the lead bowed at Qiu Tian Qing.

Qiu Tian Qing bowed slightly: "I never thought that such a small matter would actually call for General Huo. But this battle is a personal grievance related to my Qiu Family, I hope that General will not intervene."

General Huo spoke uprightly: "The Holy Bell has rung, and we

are in a dire situation where everyone has a great undertaking, the Qiu Family is a huge pillar to our Honorable Martial Continent, how can we let such small fries delay you here?"

Qiu Tian Qing hesitated for a moment, he understood what the other party was saying. The other party had made his intentions clear, at such a crucial moment, no one should be causing other issues, and if there were any struggles, they should be dealt with quickly.

Qiu Tian Qing knew that their conspiracy was extremely huge, furthermore.....

He glanced at Tang Tian, and a sneer appeared on his face, he nodded his head: "General, be careful, they are not the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights."

Right from the start, he suspected that they were the Banner of Knights. Both parties had resentment towards each other, Sophie had been abundantly clear when she raised her blade at the Qiu Family, which also led to his mistake.

But upon crossing hands, he understood that the other party were not the Banner of Knights.

Holy Flame, he did not sense any traces of the Holy Flame, if the opponents were the Banner of Knights, it was impossible. Holy Flame was the source of power for any Knight, and in such an intense battle, it was impossible to disguise it.

Tang Tian was startled, he never expected that Qiu Tian Qing would realize that they were not the Banner of Knights. It meant that their plan to disguise as the Banner of Knights to stir trouble had gone to dust.

General Huo stared coldly at him, and spoke indifferently: "To dare pass yourselves off as the Banner of Knights, your guilt has just increased! Today, even Temple can't save you!"

Right at that moment, a chuckle sounded out from the hostile

battlefield, which could be heard from anywhere.

"Who said that we were pretending to be the Banner of Knights?"

A spirit general had unknowingly appeared near Tang Tian.

Ah Xin took his time, leisurely walking in mid air, with a heck care attitude: "We are the Iron Mask Army of the Mace Field Family. The Qiu Family and our Mace Field Family has grievances, that I do not need to say. Or could it be that your distinguished self wants to intervene?"

Qiu Tian Qing and General Huo were both startled.

Mace Field Family?

They had thought of all sorts of possibilities, but they never thought that it would be the Mace Field Family. A low level Prestigious Family had ran to a top rated Prestigious Family to say that they have grievances.

That completely toppled their common sense, it was too absurd.

Since when have the small prestigious families dare to go against a top rate Prestigious Family?

And, since when, has a low level small Prestigious Family actually have such a powerful army?

On the trading ship, Xiao Man was furious: "Isn't he very clever usually? Why did he reveal our identities?"

Qian Hui's eyes sparkled, she chuckled: "I feel that he handled it rather well. Since we can't pass off as the Banner of Knights, then the name of Mace Field Family is the next most suitable. Ah Xin's mind is truly working very quickly."

Xiao Man's eyes flashed with a look of joy, but she snorted: "Lucky guy."

Qian Hui took a glance at Xiao Man and giggled, but did not say a word.

Xiao Man instantly felt uncomfortable, and whined: "Young Miss, what is that expression is that expression of yours?"

Qian Hui blinked her eyes: "Take a guess."

Xiao Man frowned.

In the air, General Huo did not believe Ah Xin's words, he sneered: "Truly, if one doesn't see his own coffin, he will not shed tears, you're still not willing to give up at such a time and want to make things even more complicated, you're seeking death!"

Ah Xin was not afraid at all, he bowed at Tang Tian: "In-law, I wonder if you can hand that sword and this battle over to this subordinate?"

Tang Tian thought about Ah Xin and Bing's relationship, and thought about their identities as people from the Southern Cross Army, and realized something. That's right, this sword contains the auras of Ah Xin's comrades.

Without saying a word, he threw the Undying Sword over to Ah Xin: "It's yours from now on."

Ah Xin trembled, he caught the Undying Sword clumsily. Even if Tang Tian had used it for a short moment, everyone could tell that the sword was not ordinary. Tang Tian actually gave the sword to him....

Ah Xin looked at Tang Tian, although he could not see Tang Tian's expression which was hidden behind the mask, but his eyes were as clear as water.

Tang Tian truly did not have any hesitation when he gave the sword, it was an instinctive move.

Tang Tian's emotions towards the Undying Sword was mostly shock towards their obsession. He was respectful and felt honored and excited to be able to fight with the seniors, but he knew that the legend was theirs, the conviction was theirs, the emotions belonged to them, to the Southern Cross Army.

I want to create my own legend, I want to write my own convictions. Right from the start, that was how Tang Tian was. Even though he had inherited many things from the Southern Cross Army, but he had never felt that he was living to revive the Southern Cross Army.

His legacies were Ursa Major Constellation, Three Spirits City, Southern Alliance, and the Godlike Young Man!

His companions were Bing, Crane, Little Xu Xu, Big Brother Jing Hao, Sai Lei, Pi Pa, Bell.....

I am not alone at all, and I don't have to be envious of others!

The emotions invoked by the sword did not belong to him, but to Ah Xin, that was why Tang Tian felt that it was right to hand the sword over to Ah Xin, and the Undying Sword would be happy as well.

Ah Xin bowed respectfully to Tang Tian, and spoke: "I request in-law to support my rear."

With that said, he held onto Undying Sword and stepped onto the Ocean of Peace.

Chapter 905 - Powerful Ah Xin

With one step, his figure turned blurry. Ah Xin landed on the Ocean of Peace.

He had a complicated look, solemn, excitement, emotional, reminiscent, his heart had a thousand of emotions, but all of which flashed past his eyes before he regained his tranquility, and he became as calm as water.

The anger in Qiu Tian Qing's heart soared.

He had fought with an unknown man to a stalemate for too long and did not win, and most of the time, he was the one under pressure. This made the arrogant Qiu Tian Qing extremely furious. And the sudden emergence of the Huo Family who stated they were there to help added fuel to the fire.

Qiu Tian Qing did not want the help from the Huo Family at all, he had confidence that he could destroy the enemies. If I can't even handle these unknown people and request help from the Huo Family, what will it say about me? If they are truly who they say they are, how much face will I be throwing away!

To be unable to handle a small prestigious family, what kind of first rate prestigious family are we? What is worse is that this will make the others think that our Qiu Family is weak, for them to lose confidence in us at such a crucial period, it will undoubtedly be a huge hit for our family.

One careless move and the whole game will be lost.

But after thinking about it over and over again, for the sake of the grand plan, Qiu Tian Qing suppressed the rage in his heart, and accepted the Huo Family's help. He had to admit that taking care of Temple was the most important matter.

Although he had agreed to the Huo Family, Qiu Tian Qing still held anger in his heart. In that moment when he saw how the

opponent's main general leave the battlefield and allowed his spirit general subordinate replace him, he could not suppress the anger in his heart.

Who did not know of Qiu Tian Qing, who had gone through hundreds of battle and was famous all around? Which enemy of his would not tremble in fear when going into battle against his powerful army?

Since when, had some random person looked down on him?

Qiu Tian Qing took a deep breath, his facial expression turned sinister: "If I do not cut your corpses into pieces today, I am not Qiu Tian Qing!"

All of his subordinates behind him trembled in fear, they knew that the Master was truly infuriated.

Qiu Tian Qing was not joking, the atmosphere instantly changed, and the endless Autumn laws inside the Qiu Offense Institute started to revolve. Clang clang clang, chain like sounds suddenly appeared as the thin layer of frost on the ground suddenly broke apart as though something was dragged through it.

The mist in the Institute started to shrink, and the Institute that was initially shrouded by the mist appeared once more. When everyone looked at the Institute, they were surprised.

Every soldier of the Qiu Offense Army was equipped with grey armor with faint gold lines. All of their faces were pale white and expressionless, with a grey mist churning in their eyes. Every single soldier emitted a faint coldness, and within a radius of seven inches of their feet, autumn frost could be seen, their bodies emitting extreme killing intent.

Ji Ze's pupils instantly constricted, Law Armor!

In the Sin Domain, Law Armors were common. In truth, armors produced by Laws were the most common occurrence. But, for the most common method to reach into the half step law Domain, that

was rarely seen. The gold lines on their armors were casted by Laws.

Ji Ze had never seen so many soldiers being able to produce the same armor before. But his eyes were sharper than the rest, he was able to tell that the grey armors were not ordinary, as though there was an invisible connection between them.

He thought about the chain like sounds.

Ah Xin acted as though he did not see the transformation within Qiu Offense Institute, he gently caressed the sword blade as he observed the ghastly cracks all over the sword. The Ocean of Peace beneath his feet remained calm, revealing an oppressive silence.

The familiar aura, the familiar emotions, the familiar shouts and roars, that's right, even after ten thousand years, it is still so familiar. That's right, after ten thousand years, we are still able to meet.

A heartfelt smile appeared on his face, as the air around him remained still. His eyes lit with light aura, like a full moon revealing its brilliance.

Since you guys can't rest in peace, then let us fight together!

"Everyone, come out!"

He raised Undying Sword and shouted out.

Following his sword movement, figures gradually surfaced out of the surface of the Ocean of Peace.

The figures that looked to be made out of mist had red crack lines all over their bodies that looked like red blood streaks that made them striking. They were like clay statues that were destroyed and built up repeatedly, as they stood extremely still and extremely quietly.

The palm in which held the Undying Sword trembled, countless of information passed from the Undying Sword to Ah Xin's heart,

causing countless of flashbacks to occur. He finally understood what happened, and finally knew what happened in the Ocean of Peace within the ten thousand years.

He bit his lips tightly as he focused ahead, forcing his tears to not flow.

So this was what went on in your ten thousand years.....

His eyes swept across every figure on the Ocean of Peace, all of their faces were blurred like mist, he was unable to call out their names, but he knew who they were. All of the scars and bruises that occupied every corners of their bodies resembled heated wires, not a single one of them was a complete person.

Ah Xin felt as though a knife had stabbed into his heart, but the smile on his face remained, an extremely intense cold aura was emitted from his body, making him look and feel like a demon that had walked out of hell, just that he was smiling.

He raised the sword and roared loudly: "The spirits of our soldiers will never dissipate, the battlefield is eternal, our hearts hold the cross, we will never fall."

All of the illusory figures trembled, they raised their heads and looked at the Undying Sword. Previously, they were like dead creatures without any signs of life, but after hearing Ah Xin's words, it felt as though they had found their consciousness.

Ah Xin was releasing pressure from his body, causing the air around him to distort, his usual passive face released an extremely sharp aura that prevented people from looking straight at him.

His eyes were red, his expression solemn, the sword tip was aimed to the sky, with a sincere and disdainful attitude, he was honest and arrogant as each word sounded out like hammers striking down from the sky.

"The Ninth Ordinance of War, Army General Xin, holds full authority of controlling the army, all units, heed my call!"

His powerful voice resonated across the entire Ocean of Peace.

All the silent and blank illusory figures suddenly did the same action, all of them stepped onto the surface of the ocean, bang, they were in sync that only one sound was heard, producing shockwaves into the sea that reached over 10m.

The illusory figures stood as straight as spears as they raised their arms and bowed to Ah Xin. They replied: "Salute!"

Their voices were as one, like thunder exploding, causing the sky and earth to tremble.

Observing from the distance, General Huo revealed a look of shock, What kind of army actually wields such a might?

All of the illusory figures seemed to have congealed slightly, and even the red streaks seemed to become brighter.

General Huo's face changed, all of the dead illusory figures that stood before him suddenly released a terrifying aura, as though they had suddenly come alive.

Tang Tian was dumbstruck, Ge....general!

Southern Cross Army's General....Ah Xin is actually a General!

Tang Tian was extremely familiar with the ranks of the Southern Cross Army, but, General.....

Tang Tian was frightened, General was only second to the position Marshall in the army ranks, and what was even more frightening was the command a General wielded, a commanding power of 2 million soldiers, a General could incite a campaign.

Ah Xin's rank is actually higher than Uncle Bing, that is truly terrifying.

On the trading ship, Qian Hui and Xiao Man had shocked looks, General....placed anywhere, in any army, they were the pinnacle of existence.

Xiao Man stared blankly at the imposing Ah Xin, she was unable

to place the man who looked like a God of War in front of her with the usual sloppy person that she always kicked around.

General Rank, Xiao Man had a deeper understanding of such a thing, as the Ophiuchus Army was Southern Cross Army's mortal enemy in the past. Xiao Man had good talent, but only reached the rank of Captain in the Ophiuchus Army, with a commanding power of a thousand men, so how could she not know the concept of a General?

It could be said that aside from being the Commander's second hand man, he held even more authority than the deputy regimental command, because the Deputy Commander was usually responsible for logistics.

So this guy is actually such a powerful figure....

Unknowingly, Xiao Man felt disappointed. She did not know why the past Ah Xin made her feel more relaxed and at ease.

Qian Hui and Xiao Man were like sisters. Qian Hui immediately sensed Xiao Man's downcast emotions, and being intellectual, she immediately guessed the reason, and spoke intentionally: " I never thought that Ah Xin used to be quite powerful, I truly couldn't tell. I made him your assistant, and he actually had the capabilities to do things but hid them so well, humph, you better use your Zanbato and smack him hard."

Xiao Man instantly woke up, That's right, no matter how powerful he was in the past, so what if he was a General? If he doesn't listen to me, I can smack him! No matter how big he was, he is still smaller than our Master! Come to think of it, no wonder he is usually so efficient, a General is truly different, he has a different touch to different touch to things.

Xiao Man smiled happily as she hugged the Zanbato, a sinister look flashed past her face.

Qiu Tian Qing had a completely different shock from the rest, as

he felt the instant danger. In Honorable Martial Continent, only the Five Great Generals could be considered Generals, and no one else had the qualifications.

But, so what?

The killing intent in Qiu Tian Qing's eyes soared, the Five Great Generals were powerful, but he had never felt that he was inferior to them. He felt that they had the title of Great General was the benefit of being under Temple.

The Qiu Family also had a general, the genius Qiu Xu Hua.

From young, Qiu Xu Hua had always been his most direct competitor. Furthermore, it was because Qiu Xu Hua had defeated him and earned the opportunity to join Temple, therefore he was able to become one of the Five Great Generals.

Right from the start, he had always been living in Qiu Xu Hua's shadows. But he had never given up, from [Autumn Wind Offense] to [Autumn Frost Cold Field], he took one step at a time to reach where he was.

No one knew that the Five Great Generals were his imaginary enemies. It was a pity, the majority of them were placed away from him, thus he never had the chance to prove himself.

But, he was finally faced off against a General.

Although he did not know which army the enemy hailed from, but anyone with the rank of General were not insignificant, and did not earn it by a fluke. Duties cannot determine strength, but an army rank was enough to say everything.

The fighting intent in him soared to an unprecedented level, having the opportunity to fight against a General was hard to come by.

This is the true test.

Qiu Tian Qing had a calm expression, he knew that it was his own

thoughts gnawing away, as the matter had always revolved around him like a ghost. If he did not destroy it, he could never improve in the future. As long as he defeated this tangle in his heart, his future would be limitless.

Come, let us fight.

He soared into the air. By his side, 5000 grey armored figures flew, the sound of chains sounded out in the air, but no one could see the chains.

This was the Qiu Offense Army's first time initiating the attack since the battle started. The intense desire to battle caused Qiu Tian Qing to be unwilling to adopt the defensive position.

They were like a pack of grey clouds, as they floated towards Ah Xin.

Chapter 906 - Battle formation, Clear Autumn Chains

Tang Tian looked at General Huo, upon seeing the hesitation in his eyes, he retracted his gaze. If he were to take action, Tang Tian would react instantly. He had never heard of the Huo Family and did not care about them. He reckoned that they were about the same as the Qiu Family.

He was more interested in seeing how Ah Xin would fight.

Tang Tian watched as the illusory figures seemed to become slightly more real and spirited, causing Tang Tian to think that they were not the same. This should be their own power, Tang Tian had heard of Ah Xin's first sentence before. When Tang Yi walked out of the Spirit Chamber from the first time, he had said the same words.

The Southern Cross Army is truly unfathomable.

But what Tang Tian felt awed at was not that, it was the spirit of the Southern Cross Army, their brand and their faith. Tang Tian had seen many strong powerhouses, for example, Temple. But he had never seen the same spirit that the Southern Cross Army had in other places.

Ordinarily, such emotions would disappear after a long time, but when the Bugle Horn of the Southern Cross Army was blown, the countless figures rose up from the dust of history and gathered under the same flag.

The merciless time and the cruel world could destroy their bodies and wipe their memories, but the deep marks and conviction left in their spirits were eternal.

Even after ten thousand years, they are still as passionate, how can that not obtain the respect from others?

The Ocean of Peace was no longer an Ocean of Peace, but a

battlefield. Ah Xin's robes fluttered in the air while he stood upright, the long sword was placed in front of him, as though he had returned to the flames of war of the past, as though he could see the smokes and battles.

Ah Xin who stood on the Ocean of Peace released a dominating aura, amongst the countless of images, he was extremely striking with his lofty radiance.

He looked ahead and roared: "Blow the horn!"

20 illusory figures moved, and a low bugle sound resonated through the entire Ocean of Peace.

Tens of thousands of meters away, Bing, who had his head buried in files, suddenly looked up, his eyes filled with joy and disbelief. Inside the Honorable Martial Roar, Screw who was resting suddenly opened his eyes, the eyes that were lost had become clear. Inside the Savage Continent, One of the commanders fighting against Mu Zhi Xia's army suddenly trembled. He raised his head, the fatigue that was originally written all over his face had disappeared, his eyes so sharp that it looked as though he could see through the skies.

No one knew of these events, everyone's eyes were fixated on the battlefield.

More accurately speaking, they were attracted to Ah Xin. Spirit Generals were rare in Sacred Saint Galaxy, and inside Saint Continent, where the present families were prestigious families, no one had a spirit general, but naturally knew of them. Ordinary spirit generals were unable to attract their attention, but they knew how powerful top grade spirit generals were.

For example, Sophie, a Spirit General that led the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights.

For example, the mysterious Bing of the Southern Alliance, an outstanding commander.

To the prestigious families, although a powerful spirit general like Sophie was good, but she was not as attractive to them as a commanding type Spirit General.

They had never heard of the General rank spirit general in front of them. Even the mysterious Bing of the Southern Alliance was definitely not a General.

How could such a matchless Spirit General that had appeared in front of them not capture their attention. They were equally curious, how powerful was a General Spirit General?

When the Bugle horn was sounded, the entire Ocean of Peace surged with black light auras. These black auras slipped into the illusory soldiers. As for the soldiers that had blown the bugle horns, they started to return back to the formation.

All of these illusory soldiers moved silently, but everyone could hear their footsteps in their hearts.

Pa pa pa.

The footsteps were in sync, and in a few seconds, their formation was completed.

Ssssi, General Huo took a deep breath. To a military general that was skilled with formations, he was clear of what was happening.

The orderly formation was extremely tight, their killing intent seemed to congeal into a substance like flow, the Ocean of Peace beneath their feet frozen from their killing intent, while the air flow above the Ocean of Peace seemed to slow down.

In the air, Qiu Tian Qing's expression changed. Previously, when Ah Xin made his move, he did not feel threatened. But after the illusory soldiers revealed their killing intent, it made his heart jump. ~They are true elites that had gone through hundreds of battles, even the subordinates in my charge cannot release such killing intent.

The more one goes through battles, the more congealed their

killing intent. The killing intent emitted by the illusory figures was something Qiu Tian Qing had never seen on any other armies before. ~This is an army that had experienced a chaotic world, only those legendary armies can congeal such killing intent.~

General Huo was also able to see it, and was trying his best to recall, In which legendary army in history is there a famous general called Xin?

Compared to General Huo's surprise, Qiu Tian Qing was much calmer. It was not that his psychological state was better than General Huo, but because he was in a state to fight, his attention had become more focused, and he did not have as many complicated thoughts.

Although he was surprised, he was not afraid.

So what if you were from a legendary army? No matter how powerful you were in your past life, you have died for so long, how much can you do now?

I am Qiu Tian Qing, the man who dares challenge the Five Great Generals, you think I will be afraid of some young man and his legendary army of shattered spirits?

In the air, Qiu Tian Qing's eyes flashed with a glare, he gave the order: "Battle formation, Clear Autumn Chains."

The Qiu Offense Army soldiers opened up their arms, the gold lines on their bodies lit up and like snakes, swam along their arms and to their palms, causing their palms to light up with grey light auras.

Every palm extended out grey chains, and were like growing grey vines that extended out endlessly.

Clang clang clang clang.

The sound of the chains squirming caused other people's heart to palpitate.

Ten thousand grey chains descended from the sky like ten thousand growing grey vines, the scene of it was extremely pressurizing.

No one had seen such a majestic and strange sight before, causing their scalps to go numb.

General Huo's mouth was wide opened as he watched the Qiu Offense Army in the sky. How powerful is Qiu Tian Qing? He could not believe his own eyes. The first rate Prestigious Families were all strong and hid their powerful military generals, and that was nothing to be surprised about.

But the Qiu Family already had Qiu Xu Hua. The highest quality of a military general could be said to be the Five the Five Great Generals, and that was a quality that every family yearned for.

The Qiu Family was able to live and prosper in the circle was because of Qiu Xu Hua's existence. Any of the Great General existence were powerful assets.

So when General Huo saw Qiu Tian Qing's strength which was not inferior to Qiu Xu Hua, how could he not be dumbstruck? To him, it was completely absurd.

Were the Qiu Family so strong?

Ah Xin did not even look at the densely cluttered grey chains closing in on him but calmly adjusted the formation.

"The left three sections, move ahead ten steps."

"Right two sections, ascend 21m."

"Middle three sections, ascend yourselves by 45m."

....

He was thorough and straightforward, his expression calm, his voice clear and articulate, his orders were straightforward without beating about the bush. What was even more surprising was that his orders flowed on like water without any hesitation or pause, as

though he had long formulated the plan and was simply saying it out.

But everyone knew that it was impossible for him to make prior preparations to counter the chains.

As expected of a general rank spirit general!

No one knew how many times they were moved, but right at that moment, every single person were feeling moved at the same time.

Compared to the strange sight of ten thousand chains descending from the sky, Ah Xin's side looked extremely calm. But, under his fluid commands, the tight and strict formation quickly transformed. Every order he gave would change the formation, the movement of the illusory soldiers were extremely concise like Ah Xin's commands, straightforward without any hesitation.

Instantly, everyone's attention were placed on the formation above the Ocean of Peace, they were like toy building blocks arranging themselves according to Ah Xin's commands, with the exact rhythm of his commands, the formation kept moving.

One side would ascend while the other descended. The formation kept on changing in Ah Xin's hands.

The grey chains descended onto the army from the sky, but the air above the formation seemed to have an invisible wall that blocked the grey chains.

Qiu Tian Qing sneered.

The grey chains wrapped around this invisible wall, forming what looked like a fence with Ah Xin and his formation trapped in the middle, while the other end of the chains entered the Ocean of Peace.

The ten thousand chains erected and became extremely straight like spears, the gold lines on the

lines on the chains lit up and formed a gigantic prison.

It's finally finished!

Qiu Tian Qing's eyes flashed with joy as he roared: "Go!"

Mist started to diffuse from the chains, along with the decaying aura. Qiu Tian Qing's heart was extremely pleased, With the finale set, the enemy can't survive this.

That was the true killing technique.

When the grey chains descended, Ji Ze was not able to comprehend anything. But when the grey chains formed a prison and when the gold engravings appeared, he quickly realized what was going on, and his face instantly lost color.

Law Domain!

The chain prison had already formed a Law Domain that was difficult to approach.

An Autumn Law Domain!

Inside this domain, Autumn Laws were greatly strengthened, and any life would quickly wither and decay. If it was a live human being inside, he would quickly grow old.

It was different from Time Laws, the aging of Autumn Laws was not formed by the flow of time, but by directly turning the life into its late age, that was the most terrifying part of the Law.

Damn it!

Ji Ze was prepared to rush forward, when his eyes coincidentally met Tang Tian's, and he stopped himself.

Boss doesn't seem worried at all, he thought. With Boss foresight, he should be able to see what I can see. Why isn't he anxious at all?

Unless he sees something that I didn't?

Ji Ze who was secretly looking at Tang Tian suddenly noticed the excitement in Tang Tian's eyes, he immediately thought that he had missed something.

He suppressed himself and turned his eyes back to the Ocean of Peace.

His eyes suddenly lit up as he could not hold back a gasp.

Inside the chains, Ah Xin had completed his formation, causing everybody's eyes to tremble.

What a strange formation!

The entire formation looked like a sword that was pointed to the sky, the illusory soldiers were stacked layer by layer, forming a robust "Sword body".

This....

No one could understand it, no one had ever formed such a strange formation before. It is crucial to know that formations required research and analysis, no formation could be easily formulated and casually set up.

Ah Xin floated to the highest point, the position of the "sword tip".

He raised his head up and looked to the sky, his face revealing a smile, and then did something out of everyone's expectations.

Chapter 907 - Sanctuary Palace

Ah Xin's movements were unexpected and simple, as he released the Undying Sword in his hand. The Undying Sword descended down into the Ocean of Peace, but did not make a splash.

What? Everyone had a look of confusion in their eyes, Qiu Tian Qing's [Clear Autumn Chains] had already locked the area, and everyone were waiting to see what heaven defying technique Ah Xin would use.

The [Clear Autumn Chains] did not possess an imposing aura, but its deadly mist had completely locked the Ocean of Peace down, preventing Ah Xin from escaping. In an army battle, it was taboo to be restricted, the lack of space meant that both parties would be forced to duel to the death.

The situation was falling to such a state.

Qiu Tian Qing's [Clear Autumn Chains] locked and restricted the area, forcing Ah Xin to be unable to dodge, but at the same time Qiu Tian Qing's army could not move.

If Ah Xin could break the [Clear Autumn Chains], Qiu Tian Qing and his army would suffer from a severe backfire. And if Ah Xin was unable to get out of [Clear Autumn Chains], then there was only one ending for him, which was death inside the formation.

General Huo shook his head, although Qiu Tian Qing's [Clear Autumn Chains] was not a real Law Domain, but it was undoubtedly close to it, General Huo could not think of any way to escape from it. If he was the one trapped, he felt that he would have difficulty escaping.

His prestige was not inferior to Qiu Tian Qing, but at that moment, he had great respect for Qiu Tian Qing. The Qiu Family were truly heaven defying, aside from producing Qiu Xu Hua, they managed to produce a Qiu Tian Qing.

Initially, he had some expectations for the spirit general called Xin, the rank of a general gave him a lot of imaginations. But when he saw Ah Xin drop the Undying Sword into the Sword of Peace, he was disappointed.

He laughed at himself in ridicule, This is normal, Mace Field Tradings is just a small Prestigious Family, how can they truly have a General rank Spirit General?

Pity they are not from the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights, he muttered in his mind. If they were the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights, it would have been perfect, the Banner of Knights were their main target, and if they could realize their goal, they could exhaust the Qiu Family's strength, it was killing two birds with one stone.

Inside the formation, the Autumn Laws pervaded all about, the grey mist quietly permeated through Ah Xin and the illusory soldiers' bodies, producing grey autumn frost on their bodies. A degeneration and decay aura surged out from their bodies, making them look like a forest in autumn.

The white autumn frost resembled strange moss that grew at a speed visible to the naked eye. Very quickly, a third of the soldiers were covered by the Autumn frost, and when their bodies were completely covered, their lives would end.

They had no physical bodies, but they could still dissipate, at that time, nothing would be left.

Ji Ze watched to the point that he could only gasp for breath, it was his first time witnessing a Law Domain, although it was not a complete Law Domain, it was already extremely close to it, or maybe it already had many unique features of a Law Domain. For example, the Autumn frost was a corrosive effect of Autumn Laws. Any energy barrier of Sacred Saint Galaxy would be like air in front of it. Its corrosive ability was above the level of energy, thus making it extremely terrifying.

Right at that moment, the calm Ocean of Peace changed.

The Ocean of Peace became alive, the ink black sea water flowed towards the chains, everywhere it passed, the bright gold lines on the chains would dim down, the grey chains turned black, which was an extremely bizarre scene.

The black sea water not only affected the grey chains, the entire sea level was rising, as though some monster at the sea bed had awoken.

What shocked everyone were Ah Xin and the soldiers, they did not even attempt to dodge. The illusory soldiers maintained their positions, unmoved.

The pitch black sea water that resembled ink reached the height of the lowest elevated illusory soldiers' ankles, when the red cracks on the soldiers suddenly lit up. The sea water rose above their calves, thighs, waist, and all the ice cold autumn frost that touched the sea water instantly disappeared.

The Ocean of Peace continued to rise, like a terrifying and greedy beast, devouring everything that it could devour.

What kind of method is that?

Ji Ze was dumbstruck, What is that black water? The other party's formation had perfectly mimicked a Law Domain, the gold lines on the grey chains were Autumn Laws, but they were actually unable to resist the black water.

T-t-that.....

Ji Ze's eyes was fixed on the Ocean of Peace, he finally realized that he had completely disregarded the Ocean of Peace. At one moment, he would frown, at another, he would relax, his mind was in a complete mess. What is that black water? A type of energy? No, All types of energy can't defeat Autumn Laws that easily. Is the Water Laws? Ji Ze shook his head, the collision between Laws would never be that silent, unless the disparity

between both laws were too much.

[Clear Autumn Chains] was part of Autumn Laws, and was already a step to Law Domain, the only thing higher than it were only Law Domains.

Is the Ocean of Peace a Law Domain? Ji Ze was stunned.

General Huo had a stunned look on his face, he stared at the rising black sea water that flowed and touched the grey chains. His thoughts had become mixed, previously, the vine like chains descended and grew frantically, drawing a huge surprise. Now, the black sea water was equally growing as fast, and growing frantically against the sea water.

Are they doing a reversal against each other?

The sea water is actually able to corrode the chains General Huo was shocked, but.....

His gaze was fixed onto the rising sea water, the churning waves looked like a monster devouring the illusory soldiers. But the illusory soldiers that were elevated higher did not move an inch, as though they were oblivious to the rising tide.

Are they offering themselves as sacrifice?

General Huo was unable to comprehend the situation, that's right, there were many things that he did not understand.

Ah Xin could guess the look on everybody's faces, causing him to reveal an unconcealable smile, How can they ever guess what it is?

They don't even know what the Ocean of Peace is.

From the start, he had never planned to use the spirits of the Undying Sword to fight with the enemy, he was unwilling to do that. Although all that was left of these shattered spirits were their obsession, even so, he was unwilling. Their obsession was so deep, but it was merely obsession, upon suffering from damage, they would completely disappear from the world and leave nothing

behind forever.

He was completely unwilling.

He had other ways, and that was the Ocean of Peace.

No one knew what the Ocean of Peace was, or where it came from. They had completely ignored the Ocean of Peace, but it was an unfathomable oddity.

The Ocean of Peace, created by the Southern Cross Army who had spent countless of hours. It used to be a dead sea and emitted a deathly aura, even if someone were to approach it, they would be corroded by the deathly aura. After that, the Commander realized that the deathly aura were Death Laws, and although it was harmful to living creatures, it was extremely beneficial to dead ones.

Furthermore, the most miraculous thing about the Dead Sea was that deep within it, in the center where the death aura was the strongest, existed a blue hole, which harbored an astonishing amount of life.

From death came life, from corpses came lotuses.

The Commander immediately realized the miraculous feature of the Dead Sea, and found countless of precious treasures and objects with spirits and threw them into the Dead Sea, and started to build a sanctuary for spirits inside the blue hole, and called it the Life Palace. In the other parts of the Dead Sea, the Commander built 12 side palaces, calling them the Death Palaces. Palaces that protected the Dead Sea. Every Death Palaces and the Life Palace were connected with chains that had countless of plates with engravings of soldiers that had sacrificed themselves hung onto them.

This became the Ocean of Peace, and through the efforts of the Southern Cross Army, the Ocean of Peace went through a complete transformation after ten thousand years.

Other people would overlook the power of the Ocean of Peace,

but not Ah Xin, as he was part of the team that had helped build the Ocean of Peace. The Southern Cross Army were not proficient in laws, but they knew the mysticality of producing life from death. They had never thought of changing the Ocean, but helped to nourish it, and through the nourishment, they finally casted a supreme being.

Qiu Tian Qing's Autumn Laws were truly powerful and could be said to be unstoppable amongst his peers. But if Qiu Tian Qing had lived in the Sin Domain, he would realize that amongst the different laws, there were still disparities in superiority and inferiority.

The strongest, most complicated and most abstruse would be the Three Great Fundamental Laws, which were the four great pillars that supported the entire Law System, which were Time, Space, Life and Death.

The black sea which originally consisted only of Death aura and only the Blue Hole had life, after the nourishment through ten thousand of years, all the treasures and objects that had been thrown into the Dead Sea had been dissolved. The Sanctuary Palace changed, and the separation between the Life and Death aura in the Ocean of Peace was no longer as clearly separated as the past, but had gradually transformed into one body.

After mixing with Ji Ze and the rest for the period of time, Ah Xin had gained a much more in depth understanding towards Laws. He used to have some enlightenment and guesses himself, but he could not break through the thin piece of paper that obstructed him, with Ji Ze and the rest probing him, he gained more clarity in the matter.

When he took the Undying Sword, he immediately gained a few enlightenments. The 13 Chambers inside the Ocean of Peace and the spirits of the army had completely merged into one body, and that was why the Ocean of Peace was in the Undying Sword.

After understanding that, he made his plan.

The power of the Ocean of Peace was immense and terrifying, as long as he could incite the power of the Ocean of Peace, it was sufficient.

Within his calculations, when the Autumn Laws on the chains touched the seawater that contained Life and Death Laws, they were immediately corroded.

That was the disparity between the superior law and the inferior law, which could never be closed.

After sensing that his own Autumn Laws were being disintegrated at an astonishing speed and the formation was quickly turning sluggish, Qiu Tian Qing's face changed, How is that possible?

The black sea water continued to rise and corrode the chains, giving Qiu Tian Qing an immense pressure. The Autumn Laws were dissolving like snow, which brought fear to him.

What exactly is that black sea water?

Why can't my Autumn Laws do anything?

Qiu Tian Qing knew that he could not back out, he roared and spat out a cloud of blood mist. This blood mist was sprayed across the chains, which quickly permeated into them and disappeared. The chains erupted with a brilliant light aura, which even affected the black chains.

When his soldiers and generals saw his actions, they too bit their tongues and spat onto their own chains, causing the pressure from the black sea water to decrease.

The chains erupted with light auras.

An extreme cold intent locked the Ocean of Peace, Autumn frost appeared once more, which was even denser than previously, the dense autumn frost spread around the chains, causing the black

parts to recede.

Ah Xin remained indifferent, as though he did not see anything.

At that moment, only Ah Xin was left standing above the sea water, all the illusory soldiers had been submerged under the sea water. Ah Xin no longer cared about the newly resurfaced Autumn Frost. He simply looked beneath his feet at the sea water, revealing an anticipated look.

Rumble!

The Ocean of Peace let out a loud sound, the sea water started to churn angrily, gales started to blow, as though countless of evil sea dragons were stirring havoc.

On the water surface, Ah Xin stood there unmoved, his eyes erupted with light as his face revealed excitement. He roared out: "Come out!"

The rumblings became incessant, as though the land in the abyss of the water was splitting.

The sky suddenly darkened as dark clouds gathered from all places, the originally clear day instantly transformed into darkness as dark clouds covered the dome. Silver lightning bolts danced like silver swords in the sky, as the thunder boomed like heavy bass drums in everybody's hearts.

Everyone's faces turned to shock.

A Natural Phenomenon!

It was the legendary Natural Phenomenon! Legends had said that when extraordinary things were birthed or collided, a phenomenon would follow suit. This so called phenomenon was in truth the resonance of Laws. But it was an extremely difficult task to incite the resonance of laws. In Sin Domain, it could be considered much easier, as Gu Xue herself had produced rainbows in the sky when she gained enlightenment. But in the Sacred Saint Galaxy, where energy was abundant, the difficulty of inciting a

natural phenomenon was extremely difficult, many times more difficult than Sin Domain, that was why the natural phenomenon had become a legend.

Everyone held onto their breaths as their eyes opened wide, afraid that they might miss a small detail.

In the other cities of Saint Continent, countless of people flew into the sky as they looked towards the direction of Qiu Offence Institute in shock. They had sensed the bizarre change in energy around them. Although they did not know what had happened, but the natural phenomenon definitely pointed it to something being very powerful.

Even Tang Tian himself was dumbstruck. The Ocean of Peace which never stirred in his hands was actually able to produce a natural phenomenon in Ah Xin's hands, it was truly an oddity!

My eyes are truly sharp!

Tang Tian pleased at his own foresight happily, while opening his eyes to view the phenomenon, he was extremely curious about it. Although he was the one to produce the Undying Sword, he was still shocked by the scene.

In his heart, he felt excitement and anticipation, regardless of what situation it was, the Undying Sword was able to allow itself to be an equal!

They are all a bunch of legends!

At that moment, the one under the most pressure was undoubtedly Qiu Tian Qing, the originally powerful Autumn Frost had suddenly met with an invisible suppression. His face became ugly, My Autumn Laws have always been unstoppable, even energy barriers cannot stop its power. What is this invisible suppression?

He was filled with suspicion, the phenomenon in the sky had scared his spirits out, causing his face to become pale white. It was

his first time harboring defeat in his heart since the start of the battle. What is this ghost in front of me, who can produce a natural phenomenon?

The overbearing presence had instantly shattered Qiu Tian Qing's will to fight.

Qiu Tian Qing suddenly bit his tongue and spat blood out from his mouth, the pain causing him to become instantly awake. Fear appeared in his heart, as a person who had been through hundreds of battles, he knew that in such a situation, he had to be more determined. The slightest hesitation and fear would only cause them to die. That was the situation of a life and death battle, the opportunity to live could only be reclaimed from the battlefield.

He flew to the middle of his soldiers, with a sincere expression, he chanted in a low voice: "My Qiu Family of the Sacred Saint Galaxy, through the unbroken thousands of years, fuel the flames of inheritance, pass it on to only people of the name Qiu."

Every word that he said would incite a small white mist from every soldier, in the blink of the eye, the white mist enveloped the entire Qiu Offense Army.

Above the black churning ocean, white mists that resembled clouds hung down from the chains.

Bang!

A loud explosion occurred, exploding countless of black ripples.

A majestic yet simple bronze Palace gradually surfaced out of the water. Its large doors were sealed shut, and on it were four black stars, forming a vague + outline. On the four walls, the words "No need for protection, rest in peace". 12 red chains could be seen attached to the peak of the palace, with the other ends leading to the depths of the Ocean.

Tang Tian felt that the bronze palace was extremely familiar, as though he had seen it before, after a moment, he suddenly

smacked his own head, Isn't that the Spirit Chamber of the Southern Cross Army?

He was startled, he suddenly had a thought, Could it be...

Ah Xin glanced up at the sky without raising his head, his gaze had never left the Ocean of Peace beneath him. When he saw the bronze Palace, he muttered: "Sorry..... Sanctuary Palace."

When he saw that there were no bronze plates on the red strings, his face revealed a smile.

In the air, Qiu Tian Qing continued to chant.

"Windbreakers cannot break the Autumn Brilliance, the will of Autumn fills my heart, whence does it come from? The three summons, to incite the Autumn wind, incite the Autumn rain, incite the Autumn frost, for all living things will end in loneliness, life cannot be given, it cannot escape time, and has to be returned.:

His voice was not loud, but every sentence that he said would increase the whites of the mist, and amplify its imposing aura.

Chi chi chi!

On the soldiers of the Qiu Offense Army, their soles, hearts, and glabella exploded three regiments of blood mists. Once the blood mist separated from their bodies, they turned white at a speed visible to the naked eye. They did not dissipate, but merged into the white mist in the sky.

The white mist permeated into the chains, causing the chains to stir, as the rumbling sounds completely overwhelmed the skies as though a great rampage had blanketed the entire Ocean of Peace.

General Huo's expression changed, he was overwhelmed with shock, he had never expected that the battle would become so desperate. The strength of both parties had surpassed his expectations. All sorts of different level methods had shook him greatly as time passed.

Fine, just fight then, at least I will still live from this.

He glanced at Qiu Tian Qing with complicated emotions in his heart.

Qiu Tian Qing's face had turned golden, his aura had become one of a god, but General Huo knew that Huo Tian Qing had truly staked everything in the battle, even if he won, the Qiu Offense Army would be severely injured by sacrificing their vitality.

Damn it!

It was not a good omen for their friendlies to suffer at such a crucial moment. But he would never lend a hand at such a time even if someone were to beat him to death. General Huo was unsure if Qiu Tian Qing was still in a rational state of mind, the Mace Field Family had revealed their strange methods, and for some reason, General Huo who was not afraid of anything, had a strange reverence and fear towards the group of men from Mace Field Family.

Right at that moment, the bronze palace door suddenly opened.

Everyone's eyes were instantly locked onto it.

A black figure walked out from the Palace. This black figure was actually constructed from the sea water of the Ocean of Peace. This black aquaman had vague red cracks all over his body that resembled scars.

That.....that is the illusory soldier from before!

Before anyone could react, another black aquaman walked out, with the same faint blood scars.

One after another, black aquamen appeared like a tide as countless of them walked out from the bronze Palace.

It was as though the Bronze Palace had an endless number of black aquamen as they poured out like a school of fish. The black aquamen never spoke a word, and simply walked to Ah Xin's side

and stood extremely still.

The number of black aqua men around Ah Xin grew, they formed a strict formation.

When the last black aqua man walked out from the Bronze Palace, the bronze doors closed silently, and submerged back into the Ocean of Peace.

The formation became extremely dense and imposing!

Chapter 908 - We Will Exist Together Forever in The Battlefield, We Will Always Fight Together

Ten thousand years has been too long, everyone is finally together again.

Ah Xin's gaze swept across his comrades, all of them only had their obsession left, and even if the Ocean of Peace had constructed their bodies, they no longer had their memories or consciousness. If not for the Ocean of Peace containing the essence of Life and Death and their personal auras, it would not had been possible to construct their bodies.

Ah Xin was already satisfied.

Yes, how fortunate am I to be able to meet everyone again. I know that I am not alone in this war, I know that everyone has not forgotten the oath we swore that year. Actually, there are many times when I myself know that there is no point in the struggle. Like when our Southern Cross Army is already gone, and even if we were to rebuild it today, it will not be the same.

But, so what? I will still do it, regardless of how stupid it seems.

I am happy that we are able to reunite after ten thousand years. I am happy that we are still the same, doing stupid and meaningless things. This is us, we are like that, we are foolish, and we have never been similar to others.

The flame in our blood is the same, the faith that has been marked in our spirits is the same.

To be by all of your sides after ten thousand years, even if it is just a trace of all of your obsessions, it tastes as sweet as honey.

It is such a grand occasion, only victory can live up to this.

He turned his gaze to the sky, the eyes that had seen through and

experienced ten thousand years were extremely calm without any trace of ripples, like a mirror reflecting the clouds and chains in the sky.

"The spirits of our soldiers will never dissipate, the battlefield is eternal, our hearts hold the cross, we will never fall."

He muttered softly, a look of reminiscence flashed passed his eyes. How many people can remember this phrase, how many people now can still remember the meaning it holds?

The eight moves, our powerful Eight Great Killing Techniques that awed the world, I wonder how many people can still remember them?

Aside from his outstanding ability to analyze general and macro situations, or his astonishing talent, the reason why Ah Xin was able to be ranked at General and become the second in command of the entire Army was because he was the only member that had completed and learned the Eight Great Killing Techniques. Even the Commander himself had only mastered seven.

What was even more hilarious was that the technique that the Commander did not master was the [Cross Scythe]. Out of the Eight Great Killing Techniques, the Cross Scythe was the publicly recognized simplest killing technique out of the eight, and the had the highest number of people who had mastered it. But for some reason, the Commander could not.

The Commander was so furious that he created his own [Green Red Cross Scythe].

Upon thinking about the past, Ah Xin could not help but smile, he laughed and laughed, the killing intent around him became denser and denser, That's right, today is such a great day, how can I use an ordinary method to finish this?

He suddenly stepped forward, his figure ascended by a few meters, and landed at the front of the formation.

His eyes gave off a look that was as sharp as a blade. Ah Xin roared: "KILL!"

The fingers of the soldiers in the formation all bloomed with light. In their palms, a faint light aura flickered. The black Ocean of Peace that resembled an unfathomable night sky, lit up with many light auras that resembled stars.

As though they had a telepathic connection, Qiu Tian Qing roared at the same time: "KILL!"

The thousands of chains that descended from the clouds resembled pythons dancing and shrieked with an imposing momentum towards Ah Xin. The thousands of chains enveloped the sky, with a pressure like Mt. Tai, it prevented anyone from escaping and feel instant despair. Countless of white mist dissipated as Autumn Frost floated down like snow.

Ah Xin looked up, the strong gales of wind blew and caused his hair to become messy. He did not even blink, the stars of light in the formation beneath flew towards Ah Xin.

Ah Xin extended his arms out, as though he was welcoming the thousands of chains. He fell backwards.

Buzzzz, countless of light dots flew out from beneath him and entered his body. His body did not even tremble as he lay on the surface, and as though he was being swallowed by a bright halo, a dazzling light aura appeared around his body.

Ah Xin revealed a faint smile, he looked as though he was enjoying it, What a familiar feeling.

His vision suddenly darkened as a black figure enlarged in his eyes.

Thousands of thick chains that resembled pythons intertwined in front of him, blocking Ah Xin's view from the sky. The air trembled, and Ah Xin could feel that his own body was being constricted and was unable to run.

The opponent's Autumn Law was too strong, causing the laws in the air around to be pushed aside.

Law Domain! The area inside had become a real Law Domain! Anyone would be sealed inside this space without any chance of escaping.

I can't escape? Then I will fight you head on!

The smile on Ah Xin's face disappeared, replaced with a sharp and ferocious aura that exploded from his body, as though a powerful and gigantic dragon that had been sleeping since time immemorial had woke up.

I have experienced the most cruel war, and did not cower in the face of it.

I have experienced the torture of ten thousand years, and I did not give up.

Ah Xin, who was a young man in the past, who was once a General, awoke.

The power from his past, the glory from his past, the adrenaline from his past, transcended ten thousand years, and stepped through time.

Within his extended arms in front of him, a perfect circle blossomed.

The bright light aura that floated around him suddenly converged within his hands and compressed to an even brighter dot of light. The light between his arms increased its intensity quickly, and soon enough the intensity of the light became so bright that no one could look directly at it. Ah Xin's body was completely enveloped within the dazzling light aura, and no one could see him anymore.

"Star Cannon!"

Ah Xin roared, his voice like thunder. Like a lightning bolt, an

extremely thick light pillar shot out from the circle within his arms.

The light pillar shot towards the chains that descended from the sky.

Bang!

The dazzling silver light devoured everything in its path, causing the entire region to become stark white, where even people with good eyes could not see anything. People all around felt as if their skins were being pricked by needles. The terrifying attack was so tyrannical and sudden that General Huo, who was close by, could not react in time, and as though he was being struck by a steel wall, he was flung out over 30m.

He struggled to open his eyes wide, although he could not see anything, the dazzling silver light shone and reflected his shocked expression. He was fine, although he was pumping with adrenaline, he was not injured. His subordinates were not as fortunate, they were all scattered around in pain.

Tang Tian was the fastest to react, and had distanced himself the moment the attack was unleashed.

But the power of the attack still caused his entire body to go numb, he was overwhelmed with shock. He did not expect that the might of the power would be so horrifying. But he thought about it, and being a general, it was explainable that Ah Xin could do it.

But the power is too terrifying!

The white light had not dissipated, Tang Tian himself could not see clearly, and the the Awakened God Armor that made him extremely cool headed and was not of much use in that situation. It was most probably due to the chaotic Laws inside the region. Tang Tian had never witnessed an area where the laws had become so chaotic, it made him worry that the place would crumble.

Too scary!

As expected from a General, they are all too perverse.

Ji Ze and the rest were not as fortunate as Tang Tian, the impact they received from the explosion was even bigger. They were all in terrible shape, their hair were dishevelled, luckily their individual strengths were above average, although they looked to be in terrible shape, no one was injured.

They could not see anything, but were overwhelmed with fear. They had never witnessed such an intense attack.

The dazzling light aura lit Ah Xin's face up. It revealed his calm expression, as though he was reminiscing and feeling emotional, he recalled the past, Star Cannon, I never thought that after so many years, I'm not out of practise.

The dazzling light in front of him slowly dimmed down and dissipated. He regained his vision, all the chains that resembled gigantic pythons in the sky had disappeared, the Qiu Offense Army had disappeared, and what replaced them was a black hole in the sky.

The black hole seemed to be a bottomless void, an extremely cold spatial aura could be felt coming out from the black hole, along with the black cracks around the hole that resembled spider webs.

Ah Xin shook his head, he felt that the Qiu Offense Army had benefited from it. If not for them being reunited, he would never have used the technique.

In the past, this technique was only used to destroy famous people.

General Huo regained his vision, he stared at the black hole in the air in shock, T-that.....that is a spatial tear when the space is broken. His face distorted as his fingers trembled, W-w-who are they? How can they tear space with one attack?

If he did not witness it for himself, he would definitely not believe that such an attack existed.

The spatial tear gradually disappeared. All space had self regenerative abilities, but once a region of space lost its regenerative ability, that meant that the space would gradually lose control and become destructive.

The entire battlefield became silent, everyone was shocked from what happened.

Everyone's gaze towards Ah Xin increased with reveration. Ji Ze's thighs were constantly trembling. He had mixed with Ah Xin for very long, and enjoyed ridiculing him and teasing him, God, why must you play this joke on me? Why is my heart beating so quickly? Why am I trembling so vigorously? Big Brother Ah Xin, can we restart our relationship?

Ji Ze felt as though his future had become bleak, a mental shadow had shrouded his mind.....

Ah Xin floated at the front of the formation. He looked at all the expressionless faces that had no features, his heart filled with warmth. They stood extremely still as they faced him.

"We will exist together forever in the battlefield, we will always fight together."

Ah Xin's face was calm as he smiled, as though what he said was an extremely simple matter.

Finished with his words, his expression became serious as he bowed towards the soldiers.

Pa!

The reply he got was a formal salute from the entire formation.

Ah Xin maintained his bow and remained unmoved.

The black aqua men in front of him gradually submerged into the Ocean of Peace. The sea water covered all of them as they maintained their stance, until their heads were covered.

When the last ripple dissipated, the Ocean of Peace regained its

tranquility. The pitch black Ocean of Peace disappeared, and a bronze sword landed in Ah Xin's hand. The bronze sword was dyed a bright black, as though it was dipped in black ink, and the original cracks and flaws on the sword became faintly visible.

Ah Xin returned back to the trading ship, and upon seeing Xiao Man's shocked expression, he became pleased: "Hahaha, are you shocked, are you surprised, don't surprised, don't you want to bow down to me? Hehehe, I told you before, I was that ferocious in the past, come, let us have a passionate conversation...."

Xiao Man's initial red face quickly flushed red, followed with flames surging in her eyes, with a swing of her Zanbato, bang, the dense blade surface smacked accurately onto Ah Xin's face as though it was swatting a fly.

Ah Xin was flung out like a sand bag, and he shot around the trading ship like a ball.

Bang, Ah Xin smashed onto the roof of the room ferociously, countless stars revolved in front of his eyes as he laid spread on the floor. He had a dazed expression, Something is wrong....shouldn't this cow be pouncing onto me with revere right now? And then I will bury my.....oh my, the legendary feeling of being unable to breathe.....

Ah Xin's legs were lifted off the ground as a hand grabbed onto his neck, Xiao Man spoke ferociously: "It seems you have forgotten about pain?"

Ah Xin looked towards Xiao Man's other hand, which wielded the Zanbato, which was drawing circles at the space between his legs.

Ah Xin tried to release the hold on his neck as he used all of his strength to speak: "We....can....talk...nicely"

"Want to talk nicely?" Xiao Man sneered: "Hehe, When I spare the punishments, you get spoilt. If not for you performing well today, some part of you would had been separated today!"

Ah Xin's entire body trembled, his face flushed white, and he did not even dare to struggle. This duo explosive woman can do anything! Ah Xin had secretly given Xiao Man the nickname of duo explosive woman, which meant she had both explosive breasts and explosive violence. There are times that having an accurate nickname is not a good thing.....

On the road back to Mace Field Tradings, Ah Xin became docile, and did not portray signs of winning a battle.

Tang Tian sat down in a rattan chair, enjoying fruits that Qian Hui fed him, and watched the pitiful Ah Xin being spun round and round by Xiao Man, Where is the bearing of your General status? Tang Tian thought about Ah Xin's heroic posture at the end of the battle, then looked at the pitiful man in front of him. Tang Tian felt extremely emotional about the contrast, Qian Hui is still the best!

Ah Xin's attack had brought an immense shock to Tang Tian.

Of course, it was shock from the pure power, Tang Tian knew that such a technique was not suitable for him. [Star Cannon] was in truth a control aura technique, which was a unique method and technique for military generals that no one else could learn.

Tang Tian had seen Uncle Bing's control aura, and at that time he was overwhelmed with shock, but after comparing it with Ah Xin, it was like a small time magician in the face of a warlock.

Seems like Ah Xin had oppressed Uncle Bing in the past.

Uncle Bing is truly pitiful.

Tang Tian was filled with sympathy, and decided that upon going back, he would find the opportunity to ridicule Uncle Bing.

When Tang Tian and the rest returned to Mace Field Tradings in Snow City, Melissa was shocked, Why are they back so soon? According to Tang Tian's plans, they should be taking a long time to mix and cause a disturbance.

Ever since Tang Tian left, Melissa was filled with worry. The entire Mace Field Family had their lives in Tang Tian's hands, if Tang Tian were to lose, then Mace Field Family would plunge into a state of no return.

Melissa carefully asked: "Master, did you encounter any trouble?"

Tang Tian did not expect Melissa to ask the question, after considering it, he replied: "A minor problem only."

Tang Tian felt that it was a minor problem, Qiu Tian Qing had caused them to reveal their identities, thus their plan had gone down the drain.

Melissa's heart thumped loudly, she knew that in the eyes of the Master before her, the biggest problems were all minor issues, causing her to be worried.

But she saw that Tang Tian had no intent of explaining, and thus retreated. Since it was not good to ask Tang Tian, she decided to ask Ji Ze to gain clarity.

But when she found Ji Ze, she saw that Ji Ze was inattentive, his gaze was out of focused, causing the unease in her heart to increase. When she found the other members, she noticed that they had the same expressions, she stood in the courtyard for half a day, yet no one bothered about her, she tried to greet a few of them, but their replies were sluggish.

Her heart continued to become increasingly uneasy.

What kind of setback will cause them to forget themselves?

Melissa felt an immense fear spreading throughout her entire body. She was very clear on how strong Ji Ze and the rest were. But what truly made her grandfather bet it all on them was the unique temperament that Ji Ze and the rest had.

They were diligent and determined, tenacious, brave and fearless, they were decisive and never did things sloppily. It was these traits that made her Grandfather risk everything and bet on

the future of his family by joining them.

Melissa had utmost confidence in her grandfather's judgement, and along the journey, the more she observed them, the more firm her confidence became. In her eyes, they had steel like determination and unwavering heart.

But, what did they see to make their faces like this?

They have completely lost their spirit!

Seems like it was a terrible defeat, Melissa thought. The pain from defeat would usually leave a huge mark in a person's heart. But although she was worried, she still believed in their recovery. She encouraged herself, to be more determined at such a period and not waver.

After thinking about it, it was nothing strange. They were against the Qiu Family, to suffer defeat from the Qiu Family was nothing surprising. Seems like I need to spend some time to console them, it is nothing shameful to lose to the Qiu Family, they don't have to be so affected by it.

Suddenly, Uncle Wylie walked in with an ugly expression.

"People from the Huo Family are coming."

Melissa's heart trembled, Huo Family!

In the Honorable Martial Continent, the five top rate prestigious Families were the Croft Family, Huo Family, Qiu Family, Mo Family and the Vicari Family. The Huo and Qiu Family were the largest and strongest Prestigious Families, and after fighting with the Qiu Family, another top rate Prestigious Family had appeared at their doorsteps, how could they not be surprised?

They're not here for kind intentions!

Melissa immediately got Wylie to pass the information down to Tang Tian, and decided to take the initiative to meet the Huo Family.

Regardless of anything, they were in the Mace Field Tradings Family, and she was the master, and could not cower back in fear.

Melissa gritted her teeth and walked towards the main hall.

There, a man that had a fiery red cloak on him stood at the center.

It was an unfamiliar face, someone Melissa had never met, the Huo Family and Mace Field Tradings had never interacted before. But Melissa was no longer a naive girl of the past, from one look, she knew that the man who had an imposing figure was no ordinary disciple.

"Melissa greets Young Noble." Melissa curtsied, she intentionally showed off a weak appearance, to prevent the other party from being too hostile. Usually when faced off against females, the men would be more polite.

"Young Miss Melissa is truly as beautiful as rumors say, I am Huo Li Ruo, greetings to you, Young Miss Melissa." The man in the red cloak bowed politely.

It was as though Melissa was struck by five lightning bolts, her vision darkened as she almost staggered.

Huo..... Li Ruo.....!

Melissa tasted a bitter taste in her mouth, the most talented genius of the Huo Family, Huo Li Ruo, was well known for his explosive temper. Whenever he goes crazy, he would destroy his opponent in a matter of minutes.

Melissa was filled with despair.

Chapter 909 - To Come Fast

Huo Li Ruo, the Huo Family's most outstanding genius. In the current generation of the Huo Family, no one stood out as a Great General, and beneath them, Huo Li Ruo was the current generation's strongest Military General.

To the Five Aristocratic Families, to have a Great General in the current generation would mean a period of prosper. But even if they did not have one, it was not as if they were without power. In the long period of accumulation, every single one of these five aristocratic families were secretly building their power, and no one knew the depth of their powers.

The inheritance of a family could not be accumulated in a generation. It required many generations to be able to be impactful. In the past, there were many families that had disciples who became Great Generals and erupted with popularity, but after that, they vanished without a trace and became nobodies.

Only the few families whose inheritances that stood powerful throughout generous had the chance of prospering. For families that had such rich histories, they researched extensively towards the nurturing of their disciples, they knew that the young disciples were the nucleus to determining the rise or fall of the family's future. They encouraged internal competition between the disciples, and thus the internal competition between such large families were usually very intense.

The Huo Family's competition was especially intense, and to many others, they called them as ruthless.

Huo Li Ruo was the current generation's most outstanding military general, he had talent and strength which were extremely astonishing. The only thing that was a hurdle for him was his explosive temper. To others, it was a norm for the disciples of aristocratic families to have a bit of a temper, but Huo Li Ruo's

temper was something that no one could swallow.

He had made a round through everyone else's houses, to other Prestigious Families and beat the other disciples of the same generation to a pulp. Of course, these were not the reasons for why he became famous, what made him truly known to have an explosive temper was that he had quarreled with a Clan Elder of Temple before, and sneaked into Temple to beat the other party up to the point that his face became swollen under everyone's eyes.

When this matter was leaked, all the continents in Honorable Martial Continent flew into an uproar, everyone were in dumbstruck. There had never been a person who would dare to execute such a plan against Temple. Temple was infuriated, in which the Patriarch of the Huo Family had to personally seek punishment from the Great Clan Elder, which then put an end to the matter.

After that, news of Huo Li Ruo disappeared for a long time, he became much more mature and became much stronger, adding his strong backer, he walked a fortunate route and became the youngest Lieutenant General. But in the Great Generals selection, he was not chosen.

The actions he took afterwards landed him as the subject of discussion in the entire Honorable Martial Continent once again. When he was not chosen, he resigned from his position as Lieutenant General without hesitation and returned to the Huo Family.

Huo Li Ruo returned to the family, but did not stop there. He created his own army with his own hands, and for two years, there was no news about him. After two years, he suddenly reappeared with his army, and started to look for people to fight, and called it "Sparring sessions", causing havoc in the entire Honorable Martial Continent. Fighting and burning houses became a norm. Local armies, guards, and armies of various families were not spared.

At that time, Huo Li Ruo became infamous in the entire Honorable Martial Continent.

Since young, Melissa had heard about the infamy and tyrannical ways of Huo Li Ruo, so when she found out that the man standing in front of her was Huo Li Ruo, she almost fainted.

Melissa could feel her brain buzzing, as though she had received a heavy punch. But, she would rather receive a heavy punch than face Huo Li Ruo.

But her long time of refining and improvement were not to waste, she took a deep breath and revealed a smile that was uglier than a cry: "I never thought that General Huo would come, General Huo is famous and known throughout, to be able to meet you is my blessing."

Huo Li Ruo was obviously comfortable with her compliments, and she continued to speak.

She continued to talk while being on edge, but the anxiousness in her heart calmed down. She could not grasp Huo Li Ruo's intent, and thus she cautiously laughed and chit chatted. She would talk about the weather or about the new tea that she had obtained.

After conversing for half a day, Huo Li Ruo finally became impatient, he placed the teacup down and spoke: "My visit today is to greet Senior Xin of the Iron Mask Army."

~It's finally here, Melissa's heart tightened. Upon thinking about the dejected looks on Tang Tian and the rest, and Huo Li Ruo's appearance, she knew that they were in deep trouble!

Melissa's scalp turned numb, she did not know what to do, but her face maintained her steadiness: "Oh, General Huo knows of the Iron Mask Army?"

Huo LI Ruo was about to explain that he followed behind them, when a subordinate rushed in for a report: "Young Miss, an ambassador of Temple requests to be seen."

~Temple Ambassador?~ Melissa was startled, but she spoke up: "Invite him in."

Upon hearing that an ambassador of Temple had arrived, Huo Li Ruo's face darkened. Temple's quick reaction surprised him. He felt that he was already quick enough, but to think that when he had merely stepped into Mace Field Tradings, Temple would have arrived.

Seems like Temple had their eyes on the Qiu Family for a long time, Huo Li Ruo thought, he felt that it was the most probable reason. the Qiu Family came to provoke the Mace Fields Family, and ended up provoking a huge killing machine.

A General Rank Spirit General, hehe....

With Qiu Tian Qing's death, the Qiu Family's strength had taken a large hit. Although they still had Qiu Xu Hua but Qiu Xu Hua was having a difficult time in the Southern Region, having suffered tenacious obstruction from the Southern Alliance. They had not converged with Gou Cheng WenDao, and it was unknown when they could return.

With Qiu Tian Qing's death, if Qiu Xu Hua doesn't return, the Qiu Family will be in danger.

Huo Li Ruo did not care about what would happen to the Qiu Family, as that was something the higher ups would be worried about.

Upon hearing that Temple had sent an ambassador, he quickly became worried, if the Mace Field Tradings Family was roped in by Temple, they would undoubtedly pose a huge threat to the Huo Family.

Huo Li Ruo started to feel anxious, He had a secret goal completely unknown by everyone else, he did not even obtain the authority from the higher ups, but Temple's reaction was much faster than he had thought.

Seuss walked in, and upon seeing Melissa, his eyes lit up. He walked forward and greeting cordially: "Young Miss Melissa, I am Temple's Clan Elder Seuss, I am truly sorry to make a sudden visit up your door."

A sudden visit by the Clan Elder of Temple had already made Melissa feel confused, but the cordial greetings made Melissa even more confused.

We have interacted with Temple before, but a visit by the Clan Elder? What are they trying to do? They always sent men to come over, but now, an important person has come!

If it was any ordinary day, Melissa would feel uncomfortable, but she would definitely feel overwhelmed by favor from them. But the current her was helping Master Tang Tian dig a hole into Temple's walls, Did they sense something, that's why they came to look for us?

Melissa became even more anxious, but she maintained a smile: "We are in honor of Clan Elder Seuss' presence, your presence brings light to my humble dwelling, why say that you are disturbing. We are always looking forward for Temple to bring light to our small business family."

Seuss laughed: "Then I will have to come more often."

Upon entering the door, he was constantly sizing Melissa up. No matter how he looked, he could not see any abnormalities. But upon thinking about what had happened earlier in the day, he quickly changed his attitude, and his mind started to work quickly.

He was present at the right time.

Sophie had led the Honorable Martial of Knights to sweep the Qiu Family's camp, both parties had become hostile towards each other like fire and water, and there were no longer any possibilities of them reconciling. As for the Five Aristocratic Prestigious Families that had plotted for power, it had completely infuriated

Temple.

Temple wanted to take action on the Qiu Family, thus Seuss was dispatched to take action.

Of course, Temple's counterattack was not only to destroy the Qiu Family, thus Seuss had many more responsibility on his back.

Once the Great Clan Elder made a decision, the entire Temple would follow through with full force. The entire Temple had joined in opposition to the same enemy, as the authority of Temple had never been challenged before.

When Seuss personally witnessed the annihilation of the Qiu Offense Army, he received a huge impact, and had not managed to calm down even when he had reached Mace Field Tradings Family. He was overwhelmed with shock, that the Qiu Family had concealed Qiu Tian Qing's strength. If he had gone according to plan and took action against the Qiu Family, they would have suffered tremendously.

Thinking back about the descending chains, Seuss heart trembled. Seems like the only person who can withstand those chains in the entire Temple is Sophie.

Luckily, Mace Field Tradings fought with them, and saved Temple from a huge problem!

No wonder Mace Field Tradings did not even give the Qiu Family face, they themselves obtained such a powerful card to play, and were not afraid of the Qiu Family at all. The Qiu Family could be considered to be extremely unlucky, allowing Seuss to celebrate in their calamity.

Seuss had decided to rope in Mace Field Tradings. With such a powerful fighting strength, it was enough to level the field. A General Rank Spirit General that could cause a tear in the space was extremely powerful. Ignoring the fact that they were in a predicament, even if it was any ordinary day, Temple was willing

to fork out any price to obtain the strength.

Thinking about that, Seuss became energetic, he immediately asked: "I wonder if I can meet Senior Xin?"

Melissa who was secretly experiencing shock calmed down, the other down, the other party's manner of speech and attitude was not one to find trouble. Right, why are they all here to find Senior Xin? Melissa thought about it, Huo Li Ruo seemed to have said something about Senior Xin as well, but my focus was on the Iron Mask Army.

"Senior Xin?" Melissa revealed a look of doubt, Seems like I am a nobody here. She guessed Seuss' age, For him to call someone a senior, that person must definitely be an old man with white hair.

But there isn't any powerful old man by Master's side.

"That's right, Seuss witnessed Senior Xin's supreme bearing, and truly admires Senior Xin. I have thus thickened my skin to come here, I hope Young Miss Melissa won't take offense." Seuss laughed.

He did not notice Huo Li Ruo by the side, whose face had become extremely gloomy.

"But, there isn't a senior called Xin in my establishment." Melissa had a look of doubt: "I am not sure where did you hear of this senior called Xin? I think that someone had made a mistake."

"Impossible!"

Two voices came out simultaneously.

Seuss' heart instantly tensed, when he entered, he did not notice that there was someone else!

He turned his face, and when he saw who it was, the smile on his face instantly disappeared: "I Never thought that General Huo would be here."

Seuss suddenly stiffened his face, and continued: "Mace Field

Tradings is an indispensable family of my Honorable Martial Continent, whoever goes against Mace Field Tradings is going against Temple."

Huo Li Ruo was unafraid as he sneered: "Mace Field Tradings is my Huo Family's eternal friends, as for Temple, you can only represent Temple alone!"

"Friends?" Seuss retorted: "I think not. Who helped the Qiu Family to fight against Senior Xin?"

Huo Li Ruo scoffed: "What a joke! Since when did my Huo Family take any actions? Clan Elder Seuss must be old and cannot hear well, it is normal for you to have made a mistake.'

Seuss laughed: "If I didn't recall wrongly, the Qiu Family is an ally to the Huo Family. How can the Huo Family treat their own ally like that? It is truly cold blooded of you."

Huo Li Ruo's face darkened, just when everyone thought that he was about to blow, he suddenly laughed: "Cold blooded? Who can compare to Temple when it comes to being cold blooded? Where are all the allies of yesteryear? The taste of people rebelling and friends isolation must not be nice."

Melissa was in dumbstruck as she watched two major figures glaring at each other like cocks fighting in a cage, her face completely blank.

This....what exactly is going on?

Chapter 910 - Winner and Loser

Ever since Tang Tian had returned, Melissa felt that everything was developing strangely, and everything had become bizarre, causing her to feel lost and helpless.

She watched as the two men in front of her faced each other with hostility, they spoke without holding back, causing her to have the impulse to ask if they were toying with her.....

Regardless if it was Huo Li Ruo or Clan Elder Seuss, both of them were existences that Melissa admired in the past. The Huo Family had never interacted with her before, as the Huo Family was a family that was way beyond theirs. She knew of Clan Elder Seuss, Mace Field Tradings had spent immense effort to form a relationship with Clan Elder Bianchi, who was close to Clan Elder Seuss.

But the difference between their positions were like heaven and earth, Bianchi was at the end rankings of the Clan Elders in Temple, while Seuss was one of the top five, a Clan Elder with true authority. Mace Field Tradings strength held no qualifications to form a relation with Clan Elder Seuss.

But the two of them were squabbling in front of Melissa, causing Melissa to be unable to react.

Alright, they are not here for me.....

But who is this Senior Xin? Eh? She suddenly recalled that there was a man called Ah Xin under Qian Hui, Could it be him?

Melissa had subconsciously rejected her thought, she was extremely respectful towards Qian Hui, but did not have any positive emotions towards the person called Ah Xin. He was sloppy and skived all day, and enjoyed bragging along with Ji Ze, but was constantly kicked into place by Xiao Man.

This caused her to revere General Xiao Man, who wielded the

large blade and gave off a heroic vibe, she was extremely envious of Xiao Man.

It shouldn't be, but who else was there?

After thinking for a long time, Melissa could not find a second probable target.

Could it really be that Ah Xin? She was skeptical.

"Please wait a minute." Melissa had no choice but to interrupt the heated argument: "Can I ask for both Masters to describe to me how this Senior Xin looks like?"

Huo Li Ruo and Seuss immediately stopped quarreling.

"He isn't tall and have an extremely ordinary look, but he is very young." Seuss spoke out.

"He is a Spirit General." Huo Li Ruo pointed out the obvious.

Melissa was stunned, when she heard their descriptions, she had already confirmed it to be Ah Xin. Alright, today is truly a bizarre day, She consoled herself.

"I think I know who you two Masters are talking about, I will request Ah Xin.... Senior to come out." Melissa spoke straightforwardly. It is just too confusing today, I should let Master Tang Tian be the one deciding everything.

Huo Li Ruo and Seuss instantly became alert, they were most afraid that Mace Field Tradings would hide their strength, as that would be the most troublesome. They were also worried that Mace Field Tradings would be mistaken that they had the intention of suppressing them, then they would be at a loss to what to do. If they provoked Senior Xin, it would be fine if they were to receive direct punishment, but if it ruined the plans of their higher ups, that would leave them no leeway of redeeming themselves.

That was why the two men were extremely careful right from the start, afraid that their attitude would accidentally provoke Melissa.

Tang Tian and Qian Hui never thought that Huo Li Ruo and Temple would actually appear to find them, and the two formed a discussion. When Ah Xin heard them call him "Senior Xin", he instantly became elated, and ran to Xiao Man to boast, but the result was him being beaten up.

Thus, Ah Xin appeared in front of Huo Li Ruo and Seuss with a swollen face.

He ignored the mark on his face and swaggered in front of the two men before sitting down, and asked: "You were looking for me?"

"Senior Xin!"

The two of them greeted at the same time, but instantly reacted and glared at each other. But this time, they did not dare to quarrel, and sat down in well behaved manners. A powerful man that had tore space was seated in front of them, and even if he was a spirit general, he had obtained their respect.

Although there were some bruises on his face, the two men treated it as if they saw nothing.

"The reason for my visit today is because, for the longest time, this junior has treated himself as one of the strongest military general in the world, but after witnessing Senior's battle, I realized that I was just a frog in a well, the world is much bigger than I thought, and there are still powerful beings like Senior in this big world. It is truly possible to tear space. It has caused me to feel that I had been a joke the entire time." Huo Li Ruo could not resist but to speak up first, he was truly filled with awe.

He had always viewed himself highly and had an arrogant temperament, but when he encountered a man truly worthy of his respect, he would wholeheartedly respect that man.

Ah Xin could hear the genuine respect Huo Li Ruo held for him, and was inwardly pleased.

Seuss could not resist as well: "Yes, this junior had been in Temple for so many years, and have seen countless of geniuses and powerful beings, but to be as powerful as Senior, this is the first. Senior's life must have shook the world and is invincible, Senior's troops must also be as powerful, I wonder what is the name of your troops? To have such an invincible army, how can it be that no one has heard of you all before!"

Seuss was an elder with experience, he looked as if he was flattering Ah Xin, but in truth was trying to dig up Ah Xin's background. How could it be that history had ignored the existence of such an invincible being?

But no matter how he racked his brains, he could not find any trace of information that linked to the man called Senior Xin and his army. The Sacred Saint Galaxy's energy concentration was too high, and it was extremely difficult to produce a spirit general. The stronger the martial artist, the higher the probability of producing a spirit general upon death. All of the peak grade martial artists had gone through countless of improvements and tempering of their willpower when they were alive, their willpower had long become as tough as steel, as long as they had the obsession, and when the obsession was strong enough, even the energy could not corrode them.

Such spirit generals would usually be extremely powerful, and out of these few martial artists of the apex, some would gradually regain the memories of their past life, and they would gain consciousness to train, and become even stronger.

In Temple's history, they had such Spirit Generals. But it was extremely difficult to force these Spirit Generals to yield, and although they would not be corroded by the energy, they would be corroded by time.

After becoming a Spirit General, the amount of memories they could have would decrease sharply, because the memories would merge into their bodies. As time passes, it would give these spirit

generals new memories, and once it exceeds the space they have, the Spirit General's body would slowly melt, this process was defined as the corrosion by time.

To withstand the corrosion of time, the majority of Spirit Generals would choose to wipe out the majority of their past memories, and leave only the one obsession deep within their hearts, as it was the one memory they were never willing to forgo.

Seuss believed that he would be able to trace Senior Xin's history and background as long as Senior Xin revealed a bit of information.

Temple viewed history extremely heavily, in Temple's eyes, loyalty was far more important than ability. Of course, Seuss did not hold any hopes that Senior Xin would be loyal to Temple, but to know his background would put others at ease.

Ah Xin was an extremely cunning man himself, upon hearing Seuss words, he immediately understood, and sneered: "Are you probing into my life? Hehe, we are not familiar with each other, why should I tell you?"

He had never planned to give Seuss face, Temple was their main target, although he had a restraining fear towards them, he was not afraid of them. Even that bit of fear was just because he did not want to undermine the entire situation.

Huo Li Ruo was extremely eager for Seuss to offend Senior Xin, he immediately added fuel to the flames: "Hehe, Senior Xin, calm yourself, you cannot blame Clan Elder Seuss, you can only blame that it is the style of Temple, they are used to controlling other people's lives, it is difficult for them to remove it from their tone of speech, Clan Elder Seuss did not mean it."

Upon hearing Huo Li Ruo's words, Seuss wanted to strangle him to death, but he knew he could not act up, and maintained a smile on his face: "Senior has misunderstood, it is a misunderstanding, this junior has an inquisitive heart, that's all. I didn't mean it that

way. To Senior, this junior is full of reverence, and will never dare to hold any other thoughts."

Melissa stood by the side and watched the bizarre change of events occur in front of her, her mind still at a loss.

What is exactly going on here?

Previously when Clan Elder Seuss was being cordial with her, she felt that it was already strange. But when she saw Clan Elder Seuss' warm smile, she felt that she was no longer blind, it was truly him bowing and bending his knee, as though he so badly wanted to pounce onto Ah Xin's feet to lick his toes.

Is he truly a Clan Elder from Temple? Even more, one of the top five Clan Elders that holds real power?

Huo Li Ruo as well, from the start, ever since he saw Ah Xin, he keeps on bootlicking him. Hey, You are Huo Li Ruo, you have prestige and reputation to keep! Where is the unbridled and arrogance that everyone says that you have? Where is the disdain that you have when you look at others? Where is the unfriendliness and unwillingness to come to terms with others that you have?

She then looked at Ah Xin, who had a bruised face and the appearance of a person with low status that had his dreams come true, he was not even seated properly.

What has the world come to?

Didn't the plan fail? If it failed, then why do they look even more victorious than the victors?

Is Master Tang Tian so strong to this extent? That they can even portray themselves like this even after they lost? Melissa's view on Master Tang Tian became even more unfathomable.

Upon hearing the bootlicks, Ah Xin satisfied his "small" ego, then started to become impatient. At such a time, if the Duo Explosive Woman is here, she can give them a good spanking!

He interrupted the two men, and said: "Alright, stop with all the nonsense, speak, what you want to tell me, don't waste my time chasing gi-.....my time to chase my thoughts."

Huo Li Ruo had been waiting for that, he was not someone who could bootlick others like Seuss, the longer they bootlick, the harder it became for him. When he heard Ah Xin's words, he became straightforward: "I wish to pay my respects to Senior, and hope that Senior will take me in as your student."

Ah Xin did not express anything, his gaze turned to Seuss.

Seuss became solemn: "I represent Temple, and humbly invites Senior Xin and Mace Field Tradings to join Temple."

Huo Li Ruo became anxious, it was not that he did not want to invite Ah Xin, but he rushed over in a hurry, and did not gain the approval of the higher ups, and thus did not dare to make empty promises.

He wanted to speak, but Ah Xin waved his hand and interrupted him and spoke: "I understand your intentions. But I am a person who values benefits, I too know that both of you have limited authorities, you can go back first to settle on the conditions, then come and find me again. It all boils down to who can provide me the better advantages. Alright, we will leave it as that, I am very busy."

When Melissa heard Ah Xin's last sentence, she instantly rolled her eyes, He doesn't do anything all day and always skive around, since when is he busy?

Huo Li Ruo and Seuss were completely stunned by Ah Xin's blatant words. They were all Aristocratic Families and the people they interacted with were the upper class society, so when had they ever heard of such blatant words asking for benefits?

Ah Xin did not even care about the two men who were in shock, and walked off.

This was just the first ripple that dissipated from the from the first battle.

The Armies in the Saint Continent that had gathered like clouds included the famous armies of Honorable Martial Continent. The stir from Qiu Offense Institute was unconcealable.

Qiu Tian Qing's exceptional Killing Technique, Senior Xin's ability to tear through space, spread through the entire Saint Continent. Everyone started to take turns guessing the Invincible Senior Xin's background. They were even more envious of the Mace Field Tradings Family, guessing that their ancestors had done some virtuous deeds to be able to gain the good graces of such an exceptional Spirit General.

People started to guess the relationship between Senior Xin and the Mace Field Tradings' Ancestors, and aside from that, no one could think of any other logical reasons as to why Mace Field Tradings was so fortunate.

Even more families were jealous, they believed that Mace Field Tradings wanted to bring about a change in their own fortunes by relying on the battle to reveal themselves as something new.

No one saw Mace Field Tradings as a low tier Prestigious Family anymore.

No one saw General Huo Li Ruo and Temple's Clan Elder Seuss moving towards Snow City at the same time to visit Senior Xin, if anyone did, they would had instantly known their intentions.

The victors would always be in the limelight, while the losers would always be ignored.

The battle at the Qiu Offense Institute caused the Mace Field Tradings Family's name to soar, and overnight, they had stepped into the ranks of the top families of Saint Continent, and received the most enthusiastic and warm pursuits.

As for the losing Qiu Family, overnight, they dropped from being

a first rate Prestigious Family, and they were completely deserted. Qiu Tian Qing's strength surprised everyone, but so what? He was dead. Qiu Xu Hua was a genius, but so what? His whereabouts were unknown.

What was the Qiu Family left with?

In the eyes of the predators standing at the top of the food chain of Saint Continent, the Qiu Family had become a sumptuous lump of meat. They had no power to protect themselves, or the abundant wealth and reserves that everyone was salivating for. If they were in a peaceful state, everyone would still have restraining fears, but in a time of turmoil, being able to obtain even a bit more power would increase their certainty of winning in the future. Countless people started to plot covertly.

As an old tyrant Family, the Qiu Family knew what they were in for, and were not willing to stretch their necks out to be cut.

The massacre at the Qiu Offense Institute was a tragic loss for the Qiu Family. They knew that if they did not retaliate with power immediately, they would soon be combed by the hungry jackals and hyenas who would bare their fangs at them.

Qiu Yu looked out of the window, and saw Mace Field Tradings doors that were about to be trampled by the overflowing number of people, all of them whom he was familiar with, causing him to be filled with anger. "Those ingrates! They usually come to our Qiu Family with their tails wagging for food, now they have all ran over to Mace Field Tradings, a group of spiteful men!"

The Qiu Family were abandoned by their allies, and no other families were willing to speak up for the Qiu Family. Even their subordinate, Elizabeth Tradings, were hiding and avoiding the Qiu Family.

"Isn't the world like this? The winners will gain approval while the losers lose everything." Behind him, a man laid on the bed and spoke up.

"We have not lost!" Qiu Yu spoke solemnly.

"We have lost since the battle of Qiu Offense Institute." The man on the bed said lazily.

"Our Qiu Family has not lost." Qiu Yu spoke, then continued excitedly: "We still have Xu Hua, and we still have you!"

"You shouldn't have such high expectations for me." The man on the bed sat upright and spoke with a look of helplessness: "If you're like that, I will feel pressured. We still have Xu Hua, he isn't dead, no one will dare to lay their hands on the Qiu Family."

"We are already in this state, but Ah Ning, you still talk like this!" Qiu Yu was extremely unhappy, Qiu Xu Hua's whereabouts were unknown, and the Qiu Family was in their most difficult times.

"Alright alright, I will do my best." Qiu my best." Qiu Ning sighed, but his eyes revealed a trace of light which quickly disappeared: "You should start planning, your brains are better than mine."

When Qiu Yu heard Ah Ning's assurance, he calmed down. He was extremely confident in Qiu Ning, but he was worried that Qiu Ning would not be earnest, as most of the time, the Qiu Family never paid much attention to Qiu Ning.

They could not be blamed, Qiu Ning walked on a completely different path.

In the past, the Qiu Family and Temple had a good relationship, and when Qiu Xu Hua became one of the Great Generals, they obtained a few unique goods from Temple, for example martial techniques and spirit techniques.

Temple's martial and spirit techniques came from the Temple in Heaven's Road. As Martial Techniques were of a lower grade, Temple released more of them, but as for spirit techniques, Temple had always kept them a secret. But all of the martial techniques from Heaven's Road did not form a huge wave or

influence in the Honorable Martial Continent. Occasionally, there would be people who learned a thing or two of martial techniques and used them to aid in their everyday lives.

The Heaven's Road martial techniques were an extremely large system with its high and low levels with differing grades. To truly choose martial techniques meant parting ways with the Sacred Saint Galaxy's army system, and it was something the majority was unwilling to accept.

The power of martial techniques had its limitations, and was not attractive towards the citizens of the Honorable Martial Continent.

Compared to martial techniques, the power of spirit techniques were much larger. In Heaven's Road, it was a system that only Saints could utilize. But spirit techniques were not spread much in the Sacred Saint Galaxy. The main reason as to why Temple withheld it was because spirit techniques were extremely complicated.

Spirit Techniques originated from martial techniques, it was a result from Heaven's Road Martial artists that had stepped into the realm of Saints, and became even more powerful. Heaven's Road Saints and the Sacred Saint Galaxy Saints, aside from having the power of directly mobilizing energy, they had too many differences. For example, Spirit Domain, Spirit Values, or even products such as spirit technique cards etc that Sacred Saint Galaxy had difficult understanding.

That was the reason why spirit techniques never became a big thing in Sacred Saint Galaxy, although there were more saints in Sacred Saint Galaxy.

Qiu Ning was an exception.

From young, he had always been extremely interested in martial techniques, he ignored the advice of his seniors and immersed himself in martial techniques. That was the reason why he was never viewed importantly by the family, but he did not care much

and was extremely solitary.

Qiu Xu Hua and him were similar in age and grew up together, and after becoming a Great General, he specially obtained countless of spirit techniques from Temple for Qiu Ning. All of these spirit techniques was confidential information, but as a Great General, he had extremely high authority and was completely given free reign.

In truth, Temple did not care much about the spirit techniques, aside from being information piled up on bookshelves, these things that could not be trained in did not serve any purpose.

No one expected for Qiu Ning to walk this path, and became the strongest martial artist of the Qiu Family.

But it did not change his situation. In a generation where Armies held dominance, the Qiu Family was an old school family. Qiu Xu Hua and Qiu Tian Qing, who were both peak military generals whose talents intimidated everyone, held the most influence in the Qiu Family.

No matter how strong a person was individually, the most he could be used for was being an assassin.

But did the Qiu Family need an assassin?

In the entire Qiu Family, no one would had thought that there would be a day that the Qiu Family would need an assassin to reclaim their honor.

Even Qiu Ning himself never thought that the fate of the Qiu Family would fall into his hands. He was in a daze, and completely disregarded Qiu Yu's words.

"We shall wait, isn't Temple and its alliance trying to rope Mace Field Tradings in? They will definitely appear, and in their faces, we will kill the Spirit General that they so badly want to rope in, I can imagine how wonderful their expressions would be...."

Chapter 911 - Respective Bargaining Chips

Honorable Martial Palace.

"Clan Elder Seuss' report isn't exaggerated. It was extremely difficult to seek confirmation of the battle at the Qiu Offense Institute, but at the later stages of the battle, especially for Xin's final attack, it was witnessed by many people. We have surveyed over 60 witnesses, and all of them gave the same result. We have arranged 70 Clan Elders to access over 3000 old records through the night, and finally obtained nine possible targets, but we are still unable to confirm his identity."

"Considering that Xin's background is most likely related to Mace Field Tradings Family, we have also investigated on Mace Field Tradings Family. We went to read up on their history, but we have very limited information. Mace Field Tradings family's history is extremely long, their ancestors were a branch of family from the north, and the north families could be traced back to 200 thousand years. It is a pity that Mace Field Tradings Family's successive generations did not live in good conditions, the information was not preserved well at all, and thus there are no useful information for us."

Clan Elder Ta Fei's reports were always detailed, his face was covered with wrinkles, but he was still vigorous and hearty, his grey eyes remained extremely sharp, his hair was combed to perfection, and his pure white robes were a perfect fit for him. He was unlike other Clan Elders that enjoyed material possessions like brilliant and bright gemstones, or enjoyed delicate brooches and such. There were no ornaments on him, he was extremely simple, like a veteran that only awaited for commands.

If it was anybody's first time meeting him, very few would know that this extremely simple old man was actually the second man of Temple.

After listening to Clan Elder Ta Fei's report, the Great Clan Elder spoke up: "You've said so much, but what you mean is that there was no results?"

Clan Elder Ta Fei trembled, cold perspiration trickled down his back, he lowered his head and gritted his teeth and spoke: "Yes. We did not find any useful information."

When the Great Clan Elder was a nobody, Ta Fei had been his adjutant. He had followed the Great Clan Elder from the beginning, and in the span of over 40 years, they gained prestige and reputation, while he gained the trust of the Great Clan Elder. When the Great Clan Elder became the master of the Honorable Martial Palace, he too, got promoted rank after rank, and became the second most important figure in Temple.

After following him for many years, he understood the Great Clan Elder's temper extremely well, and did not conceal anything despite being fearful of angering the Great Clan Elder. But the growing pressure from the Great Clan Elder made him extremely nervous which did not come from habit but an instinctive reaction from his body.

The Great Clan Elder remained quiet for a moment, then spoke up: "Tell Seuss that I will give him the largest authority, I want to see this Spirit General."

"Yes." Ta Fei complied while trembling, he hesitated for a moment: "Do you think he is from Heaven's Road? I am worried that this Spirit General has something to do with the Southern Alliance. Southern Alliance's Tang Tian also has an extremely powerful spirit general."

The Great Clan Elder's voice came out from the golden Holy Flames, which was extremely calm and filled with confidence: "As long as he is a spirit general, it doesn't matter."

Ta Fei nodded his head: "I understand. Mace Field Trading is just a small family, they will definitely agree to us."

"That's right. They think that just by allying up, they can go against us. They think that by taking action at such a time, we will not act against them, they think that I will cooperate with them for the sake of the entire situation." The Great Clan Elder's voice contained a strong taste of ridicule: "Such foolishness."

Ta Fei knew that the Great Clan Elder was genuinely angry, he too felt that the families had gone overboard, for their self-interests, they would sacrifice the interest of the Honorable Martial Continent. Do these ingrates not know that if the Honorable Martial Continent loses, they will lose as well?

That's right, they believed that the Great Clan Elder would not allow the Honorable Martial Continent to lose, thus they believed that he would cooperate. But, they never thought that the Great Clan Elder had his own plans.

He spoke respectfully: "They are seeking their own deaths."

"They are all rotten, Ta Fei."

Great Clan Elder's voice resonated throughout the entire Honorable Martial palace.

"They have already lost their ancestor's courage and glory, they are just old rats who are lost in the darkness and playing tricks, they are not fit to have anything now. But they will soon realize that the Honorable Martial Continent does not need them, it only needs Temple. Temple does not need them as well, their era had long been over 500 years ago. What Temple needs now is new blood, the Honorable Martial Continent needs new blood, we must get rid of all of these rotten meat and pus, and welcome new life!"

The Great Clan Elder became worked up, and as though the Holy Flames had sensed his emotions, it released an extremely bright light, causing him to become as bright as the sun.

"No one can stop us, including Mace Field Tradings."

Clan Elder Ta Fei accepted it willingly, it had always been like so.

Inside Huo Family's side courtyard where security was tight.

Inside the hall, aside from the Qiu Family, the Five Aristocratic Families' Patriarchs were gathered. The battle at the Qiu Offense Institute had shook the entire Saint Continent. With their fastest speed, they sped through the night and rushed over, no one dared to delay. They had just returned from observing the battle at Qiu Offense Institute, and all of their expressions were of shock.

"I never knew that such a powerful spirit general still existed in this world! The Qiu Family's loss was not in vain." The Mo Family's Patriarch, Mo Yi Gu, spoke up.

The rest nodded their heads, being present at the battlefield and witnessing the destruction of Qiu Offense Institute first hand left an extremely deep mark in them. The Qiu Family was completely destroyed. The loss from the battle affected the Qiu Family more than ever, and they judged that it would lead the end of the Qiu Family. Upon thinking about how a first rate Prestigious Family had fallen just like that, all of them felt distress.

But, they did not have the time to grieve for the Qiu Family. Their greatest concern was the huge change from the sudden turn of events, and how it would affect the situation.

Vicari Family's Patriarch, Howl Vicari, spoke up: "We need to discuss how it will affect us."

Everyone's faces became serious, the situation was on thin ice, and any minor changes would affect the entire situation, furthermore, what had happened was not any small change.

The heavy losses of the Qiu Family was the most terrible thing for them. The original five families had been reduced to four, and their strength had taken a huge hit.

Howl Vicari carried on: "Temple has launched a gathering, although we have already did our greetings, but they are still

gathering over 300 of the smaller Prestigious Families. In terms of the size of the armies, we are at a disadvantage."

"Isn't it old news that Temple is trying to use these smaller Prestigious Families that they groomed themselves to replace us?" Huo Liu Shang snorted: "Ever since they started the initiative of the so called gaining recognition by Temple, We have long guessed that this day will come. Let us consider the capabilities of those country bumpkins."

"Who knows, they are still harboring the dreams of replacing us. They are truly foolish." Mo Yi Gu shook his head: "When Temple violated the promise back then, they knew that they could no longer contain our families. They want to be the sole Master of the Honorable Martial Continent, where they can decide who lives and who dies. All of those cannon fodder are not worth mentioning."

"Cannon Fodder will always be Cannon Fodder." Huo Liu Shang snorted.

Howl reminded everyone: "Mace Field Tradings is not cannon fodder. Their General rank Spirit General is unheard of, and that sword, it is an extremely formidable treasure. It caused the destruction of the Qiu Offense Army, we can tell that its strength is unfathomable. We need to pull Mace Field Tradings to us."

"I agree." Mo Yi Gu nodded his head: "Such a powerful Spirit General will have an invincible army, if they land in Temple's hands, we will be in danger. Who has the confidence to defeat him?"

No one uttered a sound.

All that were present were the top rate Prestigious Families, they had powerful armies and talented geniuses, but none of them dared to pat their chest and claim that they could win in a battle against the Spirit General.

Sadra Croft, who had maintained silence for the entire time,

spoke up: "Whatever he wants, satisfy him."

Sadra held the highest prestige amongst the four, when he spoke up, everyone's opinion became one.

"That is if he had said what he wanted, now, it is us opening the floor." Howl felt a headache coming.

Sadra suddenly looked at Huo Li Ruo, who was behind Huo Liu Shang: "You said that that spirit general actually bowed to someone? Who is he?"

Huo Li Ruo tried to recall the scene, then said: "That's right. At that time, Senior Xin bowed to the leader of the Iron Mask Army,

Iron Mask Army, and called him In-Law, and he even called himself as a subordinate."

His eyes flashed with a look of annoyance, That's right, how could I have forgotten such an important detail.

"The Iron Mask Army, Mace Field Trading, that man is the key." Sadra said indifferently: "I believe that he is able to see the entire situation clearly. Furthermore, he can control such a powerful Spirit General, he will definitely be interested in Temple's offer."

Huo Liu Shang's eyes lit up: "You mean to say...."

Everyone thought of the same thing at once, and they became excited.

Snow City was recently overcrowded, as though anyone with a head in the Saint Continent would head there. Of course, the most crowded place was still the Mace Field Tradings shops. Everyone knew how much Mace Field Trading was worth at the moment.

Temple and the Five Aristocrats, oh, it had turned to Four Aristocrats, were all trying their best to rope in Mace Field Tradings. Furthermore, there was a rumor that this had become the most crucial point for the war, whichever side that Mace Field Trading chose, the side would had a higher chance of victory.

The numerous visits and gifts by the noble guests almost caused Mace Field Tradings to explode. Both parties mobilized all of their efforts, utilizing others to bring business to Mace Field Tradings, to hype up and promote their own sides, they made promises, incite activities in an endless stream.

The restaurant opposite the shop was equally as bustling and crowded.

"Hey, who do you think the Patriarch of the Gustus Family is working for?"

"It should be Temple, he is a new Prestigious Family."

"That guy looks familiar, eh, I can't remember who he is."

"I think he is the Patriarch of Constantine Family."

"Right, right, right...."

Everyone watched the bustling activities, and were basking in the joy. Snow City was not a country, but they had never witnessed so many major figures appearing, occasionally, gasps would be heard from the crowd, and all the famous people would appear before them.

The people were moved by the fickle world, all the small time Prestigious Families had become the key pawns to decide the future of Honorable Martial Continent.

Who would Mace Field Tradings choose to join? Everyone was curious and worried, apart from the families that had already made their stand, everyone else longed for the situation to be clarified sooner.

Chapter 912 - Temple in Apparent Decline

"It is time to lay our cards on the table." Huo Liu Shang looked at the distant Snow City, his face revealing a look of seriousness: "If Mace Field Tradings choose to join Temple, what measures should we take?"

Everyone's eyes turned to Sadra, he was the true leader of the alliance.

"Then we destroy them." Sadra said without hesitation, he spoke calmly: "We give it our all to destroy them."

Everyone nodded their heads, if Mace Field Tradings chose Temple, the threat they posed to the Four Aristocrats would be too huge, and regardless of the price they had to pay, they had to destroy Mace Field Tradings Family.

Thus, they brought their armies, the strongest armies of the four families, to control Snow City.

Snow City was placed in an indescribable and imposing oppression, the power of the Four Aristocrats loomed over the skies of Saint Continent.

Compared to the Aristocrat Alliance's forceful behavior, Temple's actions looked much weaker. Sophie's actions on wiping out the Qiu Family's camp with her Banner of Knights was not just a matter of venting her anger. Almost all of the Clan Elders of Temple were mobilized, they were sent to various places of Saint Continent, to establish a connection with the various armies and prepare for their final efforts.

But what everyone else saw was a beast at its last struggle. All of the new Prestigious Families who were sought all complied in word, but in truth, lacked the actions.

Temple truly had too few bargaining chips, aside from the Banner of Knights, they had nothing. Jia Ya was stationed at Wei

Ye Guan Continent, it was unclear if Mu Zhi Xia was dead or alive, and the loyal forces of Temple were all at the Southern Region. As for the Honorable Martial Continent's Lieutenant General, they were all linked to the various Prestigious Families in many ways, and at that moment their attitude was ambiguous.

The powerful Temple could only rely on the new Prestigious Families. But the rising and new Prestigious Families that were loose and complex also harbored their own thoughts. Their armies were weak and they lacked trust. What was even more deadly was that they were extremely worried about Temple's predicament.

Many of the rising and new Prestigious Families had secretly formed an alliance with the Four Aristocrats.

Despite knowing the fact that it might not be a good thing for them if the Aristocrats won. But they knew that they could only survive by standing by the victor's side.

The conflicts between the rising Prestigious Families and their outward devotion and inner opposition towards Temple was no longer a secret.

Temple was in a dangerous situation, as they declined further and further.

How could Temple alone, which was declining, hold an advantage against the Allied Aristocrats to win over the Mace Field Tradings Family?

This decline reached its peak when Clan Elder Seuss appeared alone at Snow City.

On the empty street, Clan Elder Seuss' lone figure looked extremely bleak, there were no tight security around him, no grand ceremonies in place, no figures bowing to him or even the sun that shone its light down on him.

Everyone who witnessed the scene all harbored a feeling of distress.

It was Temple, the ones who created the Honorable Martial Continent, the Temple that held the ruling position and was unbreakable for so many years, seemed to have collapsed like a building overnight.

In the sky, Howl could not help but reveal a happy smile: "Temple knows that they can't snatch from us, and sent Seuss alone."

Huo Liu Shang and Mo Yi Gu smiled. Mace Field Tradings Family's strength was unfathomable, and unless they were forced, they would never wage a war against them. And if Mace Field Tradings Family were to join their alliance, Temple's fall would only be a matter of when.

Sadra's eyes flashed with a look of seriousness: "Don't be careless."

Mo Yi Gu became arrogant: "You still think that Temple can play anymore tricks?"

"Ha!" Huo Liu Shang had a look of disdain on his face: "Temple is finished, their time has come. Look how secretive Seuss is acting, I am extremely joyful in my heart right now. He is usually extremely arrogant, he and Temple are exactly the same."

Sadra shook his head: "All of you forgot one person."

Howl was startled for a second, then asked: "Great Clan Elder?"

Huo Liu Shang's smile turned sluggish, he forced an unnatural smile: "You guys are overthinking it. Great Clan Elder is powerful, I can admit to that. But I do not believe that just by himself, the Great Clan Elder can turn the entire situation around."

Mo Yi Gu nodded his head: "That's right, the cleverest housewife can't cook without rice, he has no more cards to play, how can he fight?"

Sadra replied indifferently: "I wish that I am overthinking it."

His worry not only lessened, but increased, he was different from the rest, as he had interacted with the Great Clan Elder before, and had a deeper understanding towards the Great Clan Elder. He knew how powerful the Great Clan Elder was, despite him not appearing often.

Right from the start, Sadra was most worried about the Great Clan Elder, the person who never had a sense of existence, and not Sophie, or the Banner of Knights.

But he knew that it was futile to speak too much, and he could only be careful. Analyzing the situation before him, despite being astute with deep foresight, he was unable to think of how Temple would make a comeback. But he knew that the Great Clan Elder was not one to surrender or one to admit defeat.

Howl removed the happiness in his mind and said: "I will go and test him."

None of them were ordinary men, and they knew that they could not be careless until everything was over. The battle would determine whether their family would live or die. If they won, they would become the true masters of Honorable Martial Continent, and if they lost, their families would accompany them into the abyss of eternal damnation.

Seuss walked along the street, he was afraid, Snow City had been occupied by the enemies, and he felt that he was a lamb that had entered the tiger's den. But he had to comply, for it was the Great Clan Elder's order.

He continued to rack his brains, but could not understand the Great Clan Elder's meaning. Even if he managed to convince Mace Field Tradings to join Temple, the enemy would not let them leave.

Furthermore, Seuss had no confidence in the conditions that they could offer. He could not understand the Great Clan Elder's order at all, all of Temple had been mobilized to various places of

the Saint Continent by the Great Clan Elder. Seuss saw it as a futile effort, which would only let others see how Temple was losing control of the situation. Especially by doing such a thing, that resembled casting a huge net. Seuss thought that they had might as well consolidate all of their forces to attack and destroy Mace Field Tradings Family.

Mace Field Tradings is the last bargaining chip we can get.

But the Great Clan Elder ignored his suggestion, and remained stubborn.

Seuss was filled with mourn, he felt that Temple was truly in danger. Maybe this time, I will die in Snow City, he was filled with negative emotions.

Suddenly, his eyes dazzled, a figure had appeared and blocked his path.

He raised his head, and recognized Howl.

Howl laughed: "Why is Clan Elder here alone, could it be that Temple isn't worried about Clan Elder Seuss' safety? Or do you think that the blades in our hands are not sharp enough? And we can't cut through Clan Elder's head?"

Seuss threw out all of the negative emotions in his mind, and spoke calmly: "Whether or not you can cut me down, wait till I've met Senior Xin, I believe Senior Xin will make the right decision."

Howl sneered: "With the way you look, you have no need to meet Senior Xin."

Seuss laughed: "Could it be that you are making the decision for Senior Xin? I wonder if Senior Xin has agreed to it."

Howl choked, he was extremely fearful of the unfathomable Senior Xin. He did not dare to block Seuss and stop Seuss from meeting Senior Xin.

Senior Xin's words were clear and his intent was obvious, he

wanted them to set their price at the same time. In the situation where he held the upper hand, it was extremely illogical to provoke Senior Xin and Mace Field Tradings Family. Furthermore, there was no need for it, Howl did not believe that Temple could offer anything better than them.

Seuss' lone visit was the best proof.

Howl opened the path, and did a polite gesture: "Let us go together."

Seuss took a deep breath, then continued walking.

Mace Field Tradings.

Ji Ze looked at Ah Xin with a look of disbelief: "Can you stop acting? You better not screw up at such a crucial moment, Young Miss Ran will never let you go."

At the corner, Xiao Ran snorted, but she had obviously bought Ji Ze's salutation for her as "Young Miss Ran".

(TN: I think the author has mistakenly spelt Xiao Ran to Xiao Man in all the previous chapters, and came back to Xiao Ran again. Xiao Man and Xiao Ran are the same person, it is my mistake as well. My apologies.)

Ah Xin looked at Ji Ze with disdain: "Do you think I'm you? Come, come and call me Senior Xin obediently!"

Ji Ze sneered, then turned his head: "Young Miss Ran, he says that he is your senior."

Xiao Ran stared at Ah Xin with an unkind expression.

Ah Xin was dumbstruck, he was stunned by Ji Ze's shamelessness, to be able to turn his words.....

Tang Tian and Qian Hui sat at a corner, watching the trio and feeling happy. Qian Hui chuckled, but her smile quickly disappeared as she spoke with worry: spoke with worry: "Big

brother Tian, I feel that something is wrong."

"Something's wrong?" Tang Tian was instantly focused on her, he asked: "What's wrong?"

Tang Tian had complete trust in Qian Hui's judgement, he knew that Qian Hui was much more intellectual than him.

The rest stopped playing and looked at Qian Hui.

Qian Hui did not answer Tang Tian, but turned to ask Melissa: "Young Miss Melissa, the guests of the past few days, are they more towards temple or for those Aristocrats?"

Melissa was startled, she quickly reacted: "I will go and count the statistics now."

There were many customers for the past few days, causing the business to become weary from coping with it.

After a few moments, Melissa returned, she had a confused expression: "Master, Young Miss Qian Hui, we have tallied it up, There are more customers that are siding with the Aristocrats, roughly 60% of them are leaning towards them."

"Temple is at a disadvantage, it isn't strange if it was due to many reasons. Thus Temple and the Aristocrats alliance needs us, and according to logic, Temple needs us more. But, why are there more guests from the Aristocrats Alliance, isn't that strange?" Qian Hui addressed the issue instantly.

When Qian Hui put it out clearly for him, Tang Tian then realised it, and was confused: "That's right, are they not anxious?"

"Temple has been strange recently, they only did one thing." Qian Hui added: "They have dispatched all of their Clan Elders, all of the clan elders are meeting the various families, but they do not seem to care about the results. I noticed that the places that the Clan Elders were dispatched to did not have many armies there."

"Are they trying to get anyone since they are in a crisis?" Fu

Zheng Zhi asked.

"No. Something's wrong." Ah Xin became serious as he shook his head.

Out of all of them, aside from Qian Hui, the most astute person was Ah Xin, he had also sensed that something was amiss, and there was an unforeseen danger lurking in the air.

"Temple has held its rule over Honorable Martial Continent for so many years, but that's their only counteraction, isn't it a bit too weak?"

Qian Hui's face seemed to release a light that could see through anything, her cold demeanour made others become respectful, at that moment, everyone then remembered her nickname, The Goddess of War.

"Seems like we need to unravel this mystery today." Tang Tian muttered, the blaze in his eyes churned.

Chapter 913 - Respective Conspiracies

When Clan Elder Seuss and Howl arrived at Mace Field Tradings, Sadra and the rest were already seated in the hall, they had arrived earlier. Although they felt that Temple no longer had any moves to make, but no one dared to be careless at such a crucial moment.

The victor would win everything, the loser would lose everything, where even his life might be lost.

Seated at the head was Ah Xin, where Melissa stood by his side respectfully. The Iron Mask Army soldiers had their backs against the walls, they stood quietly, yet revealing their solemn and fearful aura.

What a tight security, Seuss mused. The Iron Mask Army was far more outstanding than he had previously thought, and despite the masks they wore, he could still see through a few things. Every single one of them maintained their cautiousness, he did not see any soldier looking around or had their minds wandering.

It was simply a difficult task. In any serious situation, it was easy for the soldiers to focus on their targets, but in time of peace, it was much more difficult for the soldiers to maintain their vigilance. Only elites were able to achieve such a state, which meant they had gone through extremely tough training to be able to execute such discipline.

Seuss retracted his focus, no matter how elite the Iron Mask Army were, if they were unable to convince them, it would turn out to be the most terrible thing for Temple.

Seuss laughed bitterly in his mind, he did not hold any assurance at all.

But at such a time, he did not hold the decision to retreat. He did not beat about the bush, and took the lead to greet Ah Xin: "Greetings, Senior Xin."

Ah Xin nodded his head: "Clan Elder Seuss, I believe that you have brought Temple's sincerity, I wonder what conditions Temple is willing to provide?"

Sadra and the rest were immediately focused onto Seuss.

Seuss was not used to being so direct while working, but at that moment, he had to be harsh, and got right to the point: "As long as Mace Field Tradings Family agrees in following Temple, Mace Field Tradings Family will be the only Aristocratic Prestigious Family in Honorable Martial Continent in the future. Regardless of what Mace Field Tradings Family requires, Temple will satisfy them."

A few snickers could be heard, while Huo Liu Shang and the rest revealed looks of ridicule. To them, they felt that Temple did not know the difference between living and dying, and was still portraying themselves as high and mighty.

"Temple is really Temple, they are too used to being the Master of Honorable Martial Continent, while the rest of us can only be servants." Howl sneered with ridicule, not forgetting to hit Temple while they were down.

But he was right.

Temple's attitude was as such, Temple had to be the Master, while Mace Field Tradings Family their subordinate. And if Mace Field Tradings Family were to join the alliance, they would have the identity as a partner, where everyone would be the master of Honorable Martial Continent in the future. Although it would involve distributing power and benefits, but at least everybody were on the same level.

The only difference, was a difference between heaven and earth.

Sadra and the rest heaved a sigh of relief, they were most worried that Temple would do the unexpected to turn the situation, and promise in sharing the rule of Honorable Martial Continent with

Mace Field Tradings. Of course, even if it turned out that way, they had their rebuttals as well, as Temple had given the same promise to them in the past.

But Temple's attitude surprised them.

Temple was simply pushing Mace Field Tradings to them, and they felt that Temple's arrogance was truly beyond redemption.

Ah Xin was in disbelief, he acted as if he was looking around carelessly, but he was actually looking at Tang Tian and Qian Hui, and they saw the vigilance in each other's eyes.

Temple did not retract their arrogance, but to continue acting that way, it was definitely not normal.

Seuss did not understand why the Great Clan Elder was not willing to give in at such a time, although he had blatantly ordered Seuss to give Mace Field Tradings Family anything they wanted to rope them in, but ultimately, his conditions was still saying no.

But it was fine, it was not as if he had no other cards to play.

He calmed himself down, then spoke up: "Temple is willing to handover the technique to withstand the corrosion of time, and lengthen Senior Xin's life."

The expressions of Sadra and the rest froze on their faces, their eyes flashed with a trace of panic. They finally understood that they had disregarded one point, and that being Senior Xin was a Spirit General.

They then understood how far Temple was willing to go.

If he had the technique to withstand the corrosion of time, the time that Senior Xin could survive would be greatly amplified. To Mace Field Tradings Family, Senior Xin was their Guardian Angel, the ability to allow their Guardian Angel to stay forever was a value that no one could compete with.

This was an irresistible offer for Mace Field Tradings.

"Impossible!" Huo Liu Shang blurted out: "The corrosion of time is a law of the world, it is something nobody can withstand. You are spouting nonsense."

His voice had changed slightly, it was visible that he was terrified.

On the contrary, Seuss calmed down. In truth, he did not believe it either, but at that moment, he could no longer care about anything, and acted as though he had a card up his sleeve: "It seems like everyone has forgotten that Temple was the first to begin research on spirits, furthermore, I believe that no one else has invested as much as Temple into this."

Seuss spoke with confidence, that's right, in terms of spirits studies, who had more power than Temple?

By the side, Sadra who had been quiet and observing the entire time suddenly laughed: "That's right, in terms of spirits studies, no one can compare to Temple."

When Sadra spoke up, Seuss' heart instantly had a bad premonition.

And on the contrary, Huo Liu Shang and the rest who were initially panicking instantly calmed down. They understood Sadra very well, when he spoke, he always had a way.

Sadra continued: "It is all thanks to Temple for helping us research and study Spirits so much, we will definitely bring glory to the results. Temple still has many other things that we will cherish."

Huo Liu Shang and the rest instantly figured out what Sadra meant. That's right, as long as we attack Temple, whatever Temple has will belong to us.

Seuss' heart jumped, but he maintained his steadiness. He sneered: "Is that so? Even if you attack Temple, you will only obtain ruins."

"You want to burn both jade and stone together? You overestimate your Clan Elders." Sadra chuckled: "Not everyone is willing to die for Temple. We have many friends in Temple as well. As long as Temple has something, it will belong to us."

Seuss' face finally changed, There are clan elders that have colluded with the enemy!

A bitter feeling surfaced in his heart, in truth, he was not willing to admit to it. The enemies had planned for ages prior to the current situation. Their plans to infiltrate into Temper had gone on for many years, in which Seuss had gained some sense of in the past.

But upon thinking about it, there were many indicators in any ordinary day, it was just that he thought they were merely making friends, he had never expected for their conspiracy to be so huge.

Right at that moment, Ah Xin suddenly spoke out: "I don't need it."

His gaze involuntarily turned towards Xiao Ran, I think only Xiao Ran understands me best, how unbearable the passing of time can be.

Their eyes connected, Ah Xin could feel the warmth and concern in Xiao Ran's eyes.

His mouth involuntarily blossomed into an unconcealable smile.
It feels good.

Suddenly, he had a trace of comprehension in his mind. Before he met Xiao Ran or the Young Miss, his world only consisted of the past, but after meeting them, he had the present and future.

I am not only living in my past.

The black and white world seemed to brighten up, the world in his eyes became alive and colorful, even when he was just a Spirit General.

It feels good.

Ah Xin's gaze landed on Seuss, he spoke out: "If that's all, I am sorry to say that...."

Sadra's face finally revealed a smile, he knew that Temple had lost completely.

"So we still failed!"

Suddenly, a low, solemn and unfamiliar voice interrupted Ah Xin.

Ah Xin instantly stood up, he glared at Seuss. The rest all stood up in shock, as they looked at Seuss' strange expression.

The unfamiliar voice actually came out from Seuss.

Everyone could see that there was something wrong with Seuss. He had froze on the spot, his eyes were in a daze as they lost focus, and his mouth closed up. It was an extremely strange sight, and everyone felt a cold chill run up their back, the hairs on their bodies standing straight up.

Sadra stared at Seuss, then exclaimed in shock: "Great Clan Elder!"

"Hehe." Seuss remained unmoved, his mouth was closed, and the voice seem to project from his chest: "Sadra, I never thought that never thought that you could still recognize my voice, it's been 20 years right."

Sadra regained his calm: "That's right, it's been 23 years."

"Your memory will always be better than mine, I never thought that we would meet here, my old friend, but now, we have to fight to the death." Great Clan Elder sighed.

"I am just taking back what belongs to us." Sadra replied indifferently.

"Everything in the Honorable Martial Continent, even you, belongs to Temple." The Great Clan Elder spoke indifferently, yet

held a tyrannical tone.

Sadra remained unfazed: "That's the reason for this war."

"20 years ago, I knew that you did not have the heart, but I could not take your life. Everything's over, Sadra. Thank you for this war, but a new era is about to begin."

Sadra's complexion turned dark, he felt uneasy.

"Honorable Martial Continent doesn't need any Prestigious Family, it only needs Temple." Great Clan Elder's voice contained a fanatical tone, while Seuss' body trembled.

Sadra suddenly understood, his eyes was filled with disbelief: "You want to destroy all the Prestigious Families!"

"You finally understand? Sadra, you've slowed." Great Clan Elder's voice became even more fanatical: "Temple needs new life, the Honorable Martial Continent needs new life. And only I, can bestow it new life! But a pity, Sadra, for you will not be able to witness it."

Clan Elder Seuss, whose entire body was trembling incessantly, suddenly ignited with a white flame.

Holy Flame!

The pure and gentle Holy Flame revealed how profound Seuss' attainments on it were. The Holy Flame enveloped Seuss entire body, causing him to look as though he was on fire.

Everyone could sense danger, but they did not know where it was coming from.

Tang Tian moved the fastest, the instant the Holy Flame had appeared, he had already made his move on Clan Elder Seuss. His intuition was the sharpest, but at that moment, his heart was enveloped with an unprecedented sense of danger.

Death! He caught the scent of death aura!

How long had it been after he gained enlightenment on the

Awakened God Armor, for him to feel the threat of dying?

His senses reached their peak, causing the hairs on Tang Tian's body to erect.

Chi!

Clan Elder Seuss' brain exploded like a watermelon, but his body did not fall.

What happened next, caused everyone to gasp in shock.

Chapter 914 - Pillar of Punishment

The pure and gentle white Holy Flame emitted an aura that felt divine, causing people who felt it to have a desire to kneel and bow towards it. But the scene in front of them was extremely bizarre, causing everyone to feel extremely cold.

Clan Elder Seuss' head was chopped off, revealing half of his broken neck, and everybody were able to clearly see the white bones and red flesh. In any ordinary situation, the wound would spill with blood. But the strange thing was that not an ounce of blood came out from Seuss broken neck.

Whooosh, A burst of white Holy Flame surged out from Seuss neck.

The headless Clan Elder Seuss's body stood erect, and looked like a human candle that was stuck in the ground.

The white Holy Flame devoured him silently.

Seuss flesh acted like the wax for the white flames, and continued to disintegrate to the fire. The corpse melted at a speed visible to the naked eye, and the Holy Flame continued to become stronger and larger.

No one knew what was going on, but their hearts were tensed, as though they were in a horror movie, and something terrible was about to happen to them. But no one knew how to stop the flames, even destroying the head was useless, they could only watch the flames helplessly.

Clan Elder Seuss' body seemed to be the best fuel for the Holy Flame, it combusted extremely quickly, and in the blink of the eye, only his waist and legs were left, the originally arm sized Holy Flame had increased by a hundred times.

The burning Holy Flame spewed in all directions, and the remaining half of Seuss turned into a torch.

The expressions on everybody's face changed, and the ones closer to the flame all retreated. The Holy Flame continued to strengthen and become more dangerous.

Tang Tian stared at the burning corpse, beads of perspiration trickled down his forehead, his back was drenched with perspiration.

He did not retreat, but stepped forward, protecting Qian Hui who was behind him.

His intuition was extremely sharp, and the sensation he had was far more intense than the others.

Tang Tian had fought against Roger before, and was not unfamiliar with the Honorable Martial Holy Flame. In that battle, he had suppressed Roger right from the start, preventing Roger from having any opportunity. At that time, although he felt that the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights had a justified reputation, but he had the confidence of beating them.

But, the Holy Flame in front of him completely overwhelmed the impression he had of Holy Flames.

The two were of completely different grades, Roger's Holy Flame was like a weak candlelight, but the Holy Flame in front of him felt like flames from a volcano.

What made him even more anxious was that the Holy Flame was growing stronger with no end, growing in size and quality, the Holy Flame's various attributes were quietly changing, and he could sense the changes.

The burning Holy Flames did not have any berserk aura, it remained divine and solemn, but it became even more intense, as though the God Monarch from Heavens was overlooking down on life, even the air in the area had become denser, as an invisible pressure enveloped everyone present.

Wait a minute!

Tang Tian's pupils suddenly constricted, within the blazing Holy Flame, there was a faint figure that was struggling in pain.

The faint figure's silhouette was obviously Clan Elder Seuss!

Ah Xin had noticed the figure, and cried out: "How is that possible!"

That is not a spirit general, Tang Tian immediately noticed.

Soul, that is Clan Elder Seuss' soul.

Everyone stared at the Holy Flame in shock, all of their faces revealed looks of fear and shock, even Tang Tian was not an exception.

Compared to the people of Sacred Saint Galaxy, Tang Tian from Heaven's Road was much more familiar with the concept of spirit and soul. Spirit Generals, Spirit Cards, these were ordinary things in Heaven's Road, and was the most common creatures in Heaven's Road, they had difference in quality, but in essence, they were all the same.

But Tang Tian had never seen a real soul before. Spirit Generals were not souls, and even the secret to the formation of Spirit Generals had never been unravelled. But they were inextricably linked, and the majority would think that spirit generals were formed from the merger of a martial artist's obsession and soul.

But no one had ever seen a pure living soul.

The soul that was alive was trembling incessantly in front of Tang Tian.

Clan Elder Seuss' soul was struggling in pain inside the Holy Flame, which was silently swallowing him and burning up, but for some reason, everyone seemed to be able to hear his heart wrenching screams and wails.

When the last bit of Seuss' flesh finally melted inside the Holy Flame, the pure white flames became dyed with a layer of gold.

The soul inside the Holy Flame started to melt away, releasing a golden liquid. This golden liquid quickly assimilated into the Holy Flame. The struggling soul became weaker and weaker, smaller and smaller, dimmer and dimmer, and when the last drip of golden liquid assimilated with the Holy Flame, the initially white holy flame became a noble gold color.

The place where Clan Elder Seuss originally stood had nothing left.

The golden Holy Flame's flames started to churn slower, as though every movement of the wick moved a weight of a thousand catties. It was like a mythical god that had awoken from its slumber, gradually releasing its consciousness, its gaze able to shatter the world.

"Step back." Tang Tian told Qian Hui without turning his head back.

He looked as though he was facing a powerful enemy, every inch of his muscles were tensed up.

Qian Hui did not argue, she quickly retreated. She knew that there was something wrong, and just like how Tang Tian believed in her judgement and intellect, she too held absolute belief in her Big Brother Tian when it came to battle.

On Tang Tian's left, Ji Ze disregarded everything, and held the blood red bewitching blade. His hand that held the blade was extremely stable, but his forward slanting position made him look as if he was a beast ready to pounce on its prey.

Xiao Ran was half a step behind Tang Tian, both her hands were on Zanbato, guarding Tang Tian's right flank, she was ready to support him at any moment.

She looked at Ah Xin who was close by.

Ah Xin already had Undying Sword in his hand, his playful face had disappeared and was replaced with an unprecedented

seriousness, along with anger, a deep anger.

She knew why Ah Xin was furious, she was equally angry. Using another person's soul was pure evil. The combustion of the soul meant true death, and Seuss did not even have the chance to become a Spirit General.

As a Spirit General, the emotions they felt would be more intense.

Bang!

A gold light pillar shot out from the golden Holy Flame, and into the sky.

The roof of the hall was extremely weak against the gold flaming pillar, and completely disintegrated upon contact.

Qiu Ning was silently in ambush, he had waited for a full two days and two nights.

When he saw the four Aristocrats' armies stationed outside Snow City, he knew that they were prepared to impose emergency measures for the city. Once the city was in lockdown, the security around Mace Field Trading would become extremely tight and stringent, at that time, it would become extremely difficult for him to sneak in.

That was the reason why Qiu Ning had sneaked in two days earlier, to avoid the tight security.

He controlled his aura extremely well, without revealing any traces of himself, he was even able to conceal himself from Tang Tian, and had perfectly concealed himself from everybody else.

He had chosen an extremely strategic location, and that was on a beam above the hall. The atmosphere in the hall was extremely tense, and everyone's mental state were stretched taut, thus no one noticed him.

Qiu Ning had been waiting for an opportunity the entire time,

but the situation had changed so quickly that it rendered him helpless. Clan Elder Seuss' transformation almost made him cry from shock.

What the hell is going on?

From a young age, Qiu Ning could never be frightened or surprised. He felt that he had seen all the oddities and bizarre things in the world, and was never afraid. But upon seeing Clan Elder Seuss' transformation, he was truly shocked out of his skin.

When the pure white Holy Flame shot out from Clan Elder Seuss' broken neck, all the hairs on his body stood up.

He had never been so afraid in his entire life before, it was truly a horrifying scene!

The intense fear spread through his entire body, causing his mind to go blank. He had never encountered such a situation, the scene was so cruel, so evil, far more than what he thought he could ever see.

But he quickly regained his senses, and his first reaction was to escape.

What family glory, what values, I need to escape from this place. The fear that took over him made him want to leave as far as possible.

And when the gold liquid appeared inside the Holy Flame, Qiu Ning's entire body turned cold, the cold intent shooting to the deepest parts of his bones.

Temple, this is the real Temple....

He felt extremely cold, even as someone born in the Qiu Family, even if the Qiu Family had intentions on Temple, he always respected Temple in his heart as though he respected a God. He had never thought that such a fanatical and terrifying thing would actually come from Temple itself.

What's more, it was from the highly esteemed Great Clan Elder!

The noble and beautiful gold liquid assimilated into the Holy Flame, increasing the sovereign of the Holy Flame multiple folds. The overbearing and beauty of the flame overwhelmed Qiu Ning.

Without any hesitation, he completely disregarded the fact that his cover would be blown as he rushed out with all of his strength.

I need to leave this place as far as I can!

That was the only thought in his mind, the unprecedented fear and caused him to unleash his hidden potential, and with an unprecedented speed, he rushed out.

At that time, no one cared about him, everyone were locked onto the horrifying scene. The stronger the power, the more dangerous and intense feeling it gave off, and everyone stared at the golden Flames as though they were staring at their greatest enemy.

No one knew what the regiment of Holy Flames were, but they knew that the Great Clan Elder's plan was within the terrifying golden Flames.

Qiu Ning had just reached the door, when he suddenly felt something erupting from behind him. An ice cold divine aura enveloped his body and mind.

He instantly turned sluggish, and the moment he turned his head to look back, the golden Holy Flames shot into the sky.

The golden flaming pillar shot through the clouds, the ice cold Divine Aura came from this powerful golden pillar of flames.

"The Pillar of Punishment!"

Sadra's voice came out from behind him.

Qiu Ning's face changed once again. Pillar of Punishment, he had heard of it before. It was Temple's most cruel punishment, and only the most unforgivable guilty members that could not be pardoned would be tied to the Pillar of Punishment. These guilty

members that were tied onto the Pillar of Punishment would become fuel for the Holy Flame, and their bodies would combust slowly. In the entire process, the guilty member would not die, but instead, they would be completely awake, and their senses were amplified by countless times. Thus, the pain would be amplified countless of times.

It was Temple's most brutal punishment, the pain was far worse and brutal than being in Hell.

When many of such guilty members knew that they were to be trialed by the Pillar of Punishment, they would do their best to commit suicide.

Temple had not used the Pillar of Punishment for many years, but it had finally appeared.

Qiu Ning forcefully suppressed the fear and horror in his heart, he disregarded everything else and ran, he knew that at such a time, he had to be more determined. Any slight hesitation would only cause him to lose his opportunity to escape.

No one stopped him, and in the blink of the eye, he had rushed out of the hall and onto the street.

He heaved a sigh of relief, Finally, I escaped from that horror, I barely managed to escape with my life.

Temple is too scary, the Great Clan Elder is too scary, this is completely insane and ridiculous!

The sense of having a renewed life allowed him to relax, and his footsteps became lighter. He planned to leave immediately, away from Snow City, away from Saint Continent.

He was not a fool, the Great Clan Elder dared to incite such a fanatical and ridiculous matter, he definitely had an impenetrable deployment ready.

Trap!

It had been a trap the entire time!

Right from the time when the Holy Bell was rung, everything had been a trap set by the Great Clan Elder. Qiu Ning smiled bitterly, upon thinking about his own family, all the various Prestigious families, all of those who thought they were bestowed with talent, all of those who had run into the fire without hesitation, every single one of them had played right in the hands of the Great Clan Elder.

Even the rising and new Prestigious Families, the Great Clan Elder never thought to let them go, he plans to get everyone in one sweep. Right from the beginning, Temple were acting when they were trying to entice and support the new Prestigious Families. Everyone thought that Temple wanted to use them to destroy the current Prestigious Families, causing them to feel as though they were important, as though they were able to bring in new life and able to benefit from it.

They can never imagine that they are being played right into the Great Clan Elder's illusion.

In the eyes of Temple, they are all pawns, all pawns used to paralyze the current Prestigious Families, pawns that will eventually be destroyed as well.

Temple is too scary! The Great Clan Elder is too scary! Qiu Ning did not know how many times he had felt shocked in the same day.

It was the deepest emotion he had ever felt. There was only the Great Clan Elder in his mind, a fear that he had never experienced.

The Great Clan Elder was that far ahead, he had planned much further than anyone could imagine, everyone was moving in accordance to his plans, and no one saw through his intent. He was that cold and emotionless, even for Clan Elder Seuss, who was completely loyal to him, was being used as wax for his flames, and even his soul was not let off.

Qiu Ning immediately judged that in the war, the only victor was but one man, the Great Clan Elder!

The Saint Continent is in danger!

The Great Clan Elder cheated everyone to come to Saint Continent, the Saint Continent is itself a trap, this place must have been deployed with countless of killing techniques by the Great Clan Elder.

Upon thinking about what the Great Clan Elder had said, that all the families would not get away, Qiu Ning still could not imagine what the Great Clan Elder would do next, What method is available for him to get rid of ALL the families?

But Qiu Ning knew that it would be extremely dangerous and scary.

We need to leave the Saint Continent, we have to leave now!

He frantically rushed towards where Qiu Yu was hiding, he did not have many friends, Qiu Yu and grown up together with him and they had a good relation, and he planned to get Qiu Yu out alive.

He only rushed out a few meters when he suddenly stopped, he raised his head to look up into the sky, and was stunned by what he saw.

From the distant horizon in all directions, one after another, golden flaming pillars shot into the sky, as though they were connecting to the Heavens.

Qiu Ning suddenly turned around, behind him, there were countless of golden flaming pillars shooting into the sky as well.

The blood on his face completely receded in an instant.

Chapter 915 - The Crazy Gambler

Clan Elder Ta Fei looked at the empty Honorable Martial Palace, and was at a loss. When he focused, his eyes landed on the golden figure at the front of the Palace, and the loss in his eyes disappeared as he became focused once more, but very quickly, it became a look of complications.

He had followed the Great Clan Elder for many years, and following the Great Clan Elder had become his creed. Regardless of how difficult it was, no matter how evil the matter, he had followed the Great Clan Elder by his side, protecting him.

And when the Great Clan Elder used all sorts of inconceivable ways of victories for him to prove his trust, in which Clan Elder Ta Fei never failed to live up to.

But now....

Hesitation and complicated thoughts flashed past his mind and heart, and his gaze quickly regained clarity. He had gone through all sorts of complications, and knew that the plan had already begun, and they no longer had any path of retreat.

Only success will allow everybody's sacrifice to have meaning, and for our decades of hard work to not be a waste.

Ta Fei had never been a soft-hearted man, and his hand was stained with countless of lives. But in this gamble, it made his heart pain.

As he was in power for many years, half of the Clan Elders of Temple were personally chosen by him. All of these Clan Elders were all powerful with outstanding abilities, which could be seen in their progress when training Holy Flame. Many of these Clan Elders were in truth more like his students, but all of them had to sacrifice themselves for the gamble.

He had personally created everything, since he had imparted the

Holy Flame to them decades ago, the plan had quietly developed. He initially thought that with so many years of mental preparation, he would be able to face it head on, but upon witnessing the pillars of flaming lights shooting into the sky, he felt that his heart was being cut by a blade.

It was a real gamble. If they won, Temple would no longer be held back, the entire Honorable Martial Continent would only have one true Master, Temple's will would be spread throughout the entire Honorable Martial Continent. It was the greatest desire of the Great Clan Elder, and although no one had ever achieved it before, he did not give up on the idea.

If they lost, they would lose all the Clan Elders, and Temple's name would remain, but their essence would be gone. And such a cold blooded method would cause Temple to become an existence that the entire Honorable Martial Continent would despise, and no one would ever forgive them.

Thus, they had to win. Only by winning would they be able to write their own history.

Ta Fei's gaze became filled with determination once again.

The Light will always prevail!

For Temple's grand plan, all of this sacrifice is worth it.

The golden Holy Flames flowed on the floorboards of Honorable Martial Palace, but the Great Clan Elder, who was within the flames, did not look the least bit old, but upright and tall, as though he was a young man. The Great Clan Elder's gaze was fixated on the sculpture on the wall of the Palace, on it were countless of realistic heroes, which wrote the epic saga of Temple. The sculptures depicted every important campaign of Temple, and all the Clan Elders that had made huge contributions.

It was because of the Clan Elders before them that advanced dauntlessly, that there was the Temple where they stood.

Every generation of important figures of Temple were all dauntless and sought for the greater good of Temple, they regarded Temple's expansion more importantly than their lives, and the Great Clan Elder was no different.

I wonder if I will have a position on it in the future, or whether I will lead Temple to the light or to the dark. No, I am right! Those damn families, they still hold on to their achievements of the past, thinking they can impede Temple, they have to die!

He required a powerful Honorable Martial Continent, and only an Honorable Martial Continent that had one voice could become strong, and could beat the Southern Alliance, to unify the world, to conquer Heaven's Road.

There are too many voices in Honorable Martial Continent now!

"How is it?" He suddenly asked, his entire body that was covered in the golden flames remained still.

Ta Fei bowed, exactly like how he did decades ago: "The plan is going smoothly. The number of Pillars of Punishments activated have already reached three hundred and forty two."

"Three hundred and forty two." The Great Clan Elder muttered, as though he was feeling emotional, as though he was sighing: "Grooming three hundred and forty two Clan Elders was not easy, and all of it is due to you. For the past few years, I did not do much, it has been hard on you."

Ta Fei felt warmth in his heart. He laughed: "You're actually being so polite with me, it feels uncomfortable for me."

A chuckle sounded out from within the flames, the Great Clan Elder sighed again: "I know that you can't bear to, in truth, I too, am not willing for this to happen. You know me, although I am no saint, but I am not a tyrannical murderer."

Ta Fei bowed and reaffirmed respectfully: "You are not."

"They died for me, I have to bear this guilt." The voice from the

flames sighed: "But it is our responsibility, the responsibility of this generation. Blood and honor can be sacrificed, and has to be sacrificed. If we do not resolve all of these Families, we will miss this once in a lifetime opportunity, the only opportunity to opening the possibility of unifying the world. We need to sacrifice, and only by doing so can we have a clean Honorable Martial Continent, where we can leave behind our legacy and successors."

"Your successors will engrave your painstaking efforts in their memories." Ta Fei spoke from his heart.

"I do not care." The voice in the flame sounded determined, old, arrogant and aggressive. The wanton flame danced, and Ta Fei thought he saw the young man whom he had wholeheartedly submitted to.

The figure in the flames waved his hands, and countless of sparks ignited: "We need to do what we ought to do, since our hands are already stained with the blood of our own people, then our enemies' blood will be the best wine, if we don't get drunk, how can we return?"

"Your will, is the light." Ta Fei bowed even lower.

The figure in the flames raised his arm, and the hand that was enveloped in flames pressed onto the sun sculpture on the wall.

White Holy Flames surged out from the sun, and instantly spread in all directions, transforming into a white flaming door. The Great Clan Elder took a step forward, and into the flaming door. The flaming door and the Great Clan Elder instantly disappeared.

Ta Fei stood up, feeling his body was filled with power. My life is already close to the end, but I am able to unleash my last light and heat, what is there to regret?

His eyes flashed with longing, That's right, to be able to leave behind a clean Honorable Martial Continent for our successors, what a beautiful thing it is.

The flaming door behind the Great Clan Elder disappeared. In front of him stood the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights.

Sophie stood at the front of the formation silently.

The Great Clan Elder was infuriated at the scene before him, and spoke with anger: "Why hasn't the operation begun?"

Sophie stood out: "I stopped them."

The Great Clan Elder inside the flames stared at Sophie, the anger in his throat subsided, and his voice became soft: "Why?"

Sophie raised her head, her eyes filled with clarity: "They are my soldiers, I can't send them to their deaths."

Silence, a silence that pressurized everyone present.

"Charles is already dead, I do not wish for them to die." Sophie said softly.

All of the anger instantly disappeared, the figure in the flames was stunned, and spoke after a while: "That's right, Charles is already dead, but we need to take revenge for him."

"Even if we take revenge, he won't be revived, but everyone will die." Sophie shook her head: "They can die on the battlefield, but I do not want them to die like this."

"They will not die." The Great Clan Elder said.

"That's right, they give up their lives and become Spirit Generals." Sophie stared at the figure in the flames: "No warmth, time will corrode their memory, they will forget their kin, forget their lovers, and become a cold blooded killing machine. What's the difference from dying?"

"That's right, there is no difference, maybe it is a fate worse than death." The figure in the flames was not angry, but his tone suddenly became stricter: "But aside from being your soldiers, they are the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights, and the reason for

them is for Temple, regardless if it is dying or living."

Sophie kept quiet.

"Are they the only ones making this sacrifice? Out of Temple's five hundred and sixty four clan elders, three hundred and forty two of them are already dead, and they do not even have the chance to become a Spirit General. They have burnt their bodies and souls, and left nothing behind. They have given their souls to Temple, and before they died, they had to suffer the agony of being burnt. The remaining clan elders will all be burnt for the Holy Flame by tomorrow morning."

The indifferent voice came out from the flames, causing all the Honorable Martial Banner Honorable Martial Banner of Knights to raise their heads, their faces filled with shock.

"This is a gamble, a gamble we cannot afford to lose. Every single person of Temple has become a bargaining chip and are placed on the gambling table." The cold and emotionless voice was like a dagger that pierced into the hearts of the people. The Great Clan Elder then ridiculed: "All that you have, was given by Temple. All of you swore an oath, to do everything for Temple, and that includes everything. But now? When Temple needs you to die, you cower away."

"No, I just do not wish for them to die without meaning." Sophie did not hide from the Great Clan Elder's gaze: "They are soldiers! They should die on the battlefield! And not in some dark corner, just to become spirit generals."

"No one has the power to choose, Sophie." The Great Clan Elder spoke: "This is a battlefield, you will never be able to choose where you get to fight, or how you want to die. What I can do is to not let your deaths not be in vain. Furthermore, it is merely to my greatest extent, I cannot even promise anything, but we have no other choice."

"Commander!" One of the Knight stood up: "Great Clan Elder is

right, we cannot choose how or where we die, but I have never forgotten my oath!"

Another Knight stood up: "I pledge my life to protect the light!"

"We should die for Temple, to let the Clan Elders take the lead, it is truly an embarrassment."

All of the Knights stood up, and formed a neat and tight formation in front of Sophie.

Pa, everyone saluted Sophie.

"Commander, in the future, we will all be Spirit Generals, and we will no longer look down on you."

"Commander, wait for us."

"Commander, you cannot die before us!"

"Commander, we must fight together!"

....

All the Knights turned and stepped into the white halo. Upon stepping in, the halo instantly became alive, and produced a white barrier that surged upwards. The white barrier surged above their heads and formed cocoons, wrapping them within.

One after another, the cocoons formed a neat formation, there were no longer any sounds, but faint silhouettes could be seen inside.

The gold Holy Flames spread from beneath, quickly enveloping the cocoons. The Holy Flames permeated into the cocoons and entered the men inside, causing them to struggle in pain.

Sophie cried.

Chapter 916 - Saint Continent Prison

The Golden flaming pillars spewed out flaming tongues, the bright flames burst and crackle endlessly. They were like were like monsters living in the flaming pillars, silently watching with their mouths wide opened, the divine aura exploded with waves that spread in all directions.

No one could judge how high the flaming pillars were, they shot through the clouds, as though they had instead descended from heaven.

Behind the mask, Tang Tian was overwhelmed by shock. He did not know what the pillar of punishment was, but he could roughly guess what it was for, as the Honorable Martial Group also had a similar thing. But the scene before him was truly too shocking.

In Tang Tian's view, he could see more than ten of the fiery pillars, and in the horizon, there were even more golden fiery pillars that shot into the sky.

What is Temple trying to do?

Hidden behind this majestic scene is an extreme danger and killing intent, how ruthless are they?

No one doubted the Great Clan Elder's words of "getting everybody", the majestic scene before them depicted the Great Clan Elder's great ambition.

What a grand style of doing things!

Tang Tian was moved, it had been long since he found someone so admirable. He had witnessed the formation of the Pillar of Punishments, which was by burning Clan Elder Seuss' body and soul. How many Clan Elders do they need to burn to produce so many Pillars of Punishment? To produce such a magnificent scene?

That Great Clan Elder views human lives like grass, he is truly

vicious.

Tang Tian suppressed the shock in his heart and calmed down. Tang Tian in his battle state was extremely cold and astute. He carefully observed the location of the Pillars of Punishment and the distances between them. Since the Great Clan Elder has sacrificed all the Clan Elders to produce the Pillars of Punishment, then these Pillars of Punishments must have some unique usefulness.

But in what way? Tang Tian racked his brains, if he had to find out the use of the Pillars of Punishment, he could act accordingly.

"You want to destroy all the Prestigious Families!"

"You finally understand? Sadra, you've slowed."

Sadra and Great Clan Elder's conversation flashed past Tang Tian's mind, as he recalled and thought back to it. The Great Clan Elder wants to defeat the families, and wants to take care of the new families as well, it definitely isn't some conventional method, conventional methods can't allow the Great Clan Elder to reach his goal.

There must be a set of rules for this, but what is it.

Tang Tian took a deep breath, and suppressed the impatience in his heart. He knew that being impatient was useless, but the intense danger looming over his heart felt as strong as Mt Tai. pressurizing on his body.

He had never felt so anxious in battle before, it was his first time.

The Great Clan Elder's strength far exceeded all the enemies he had met before, his experience, craftiness, viciousness, determination and patience. All of it were at the peak compared to all the enemies he had faced. He could tell that the situation before him was something that the Great Clan Elder had prepared for decades. When the Great Clan Elder and Sadra were still friends, the Great Clan Elder had already foreseen the end, and had started

to prepare right from the start, how powerful was his foresight, how unfathomable was he!

Back to the main topic. Tang Tian forced himself to calm down, and focused on the situation before him.

Since the Great Clan Elder wants to destroy all the Families, he will definitely seal the Saint Continent.

Normally, to close a continent, the best way is to seal all the estuaries. But the number of estuaries the Saint Continent has, there is quite a few of them. And Temple currently doesn't have sufficient armies, they are unable to seal all of the estuaries. Temple has to utilize some unique way to seal Saint Continent.

Hmmmm? A unique way.....could it be that these Pillars of Punishment are to seal the Saint Continent?

Tang Tian became excited, he felt that he had found some sort of clue. The positions of the Pillars are not at the estuaries, so Temple's way is not to seal the estuaries. If not the Estuaries, how else can they seal Saint Continent....

Tang Tian looked up and looked at the Pillars of Punishment that shot into the sky and extended to the Heavens.

The sky.... Could it be the sky?

Tang Tian's heart trembled, he suddenly unleashed strength beneath his feet.

The moment Tang Tian left the ground, he immediately felt a powerful aura descend from the sky, as though Mt. Tai had dropped down on his entire body. The gigantic power pressed down on him, preventing him from being able to dodge. This aura was extremely imposing and cold, shooting straight to the heart, causing people to subconsciously want to kneel down and worship to it.

A stern look flashed past Tang Tian's eyes, he groaned, and his entire body erupted with light aura. He stepped onto an invisible

flight of steps, and as though he was ascending up to heaven, he rose in elevation one step at a time.

Every 3m that he ascended, the pressure would increase, and this power seemed to be inexhaustible.

After ascending a couple of meters, Tang Tian noticed that the sky above his head had suddenly lit up with a gold screen. Surging golden Holy Flames spewed out from the Pillars of Punishment, transforming into the golden screen and trapping Tang Tian from above.

Tang Tian's momentum in ascending stopped abruptly. He tried to ascend again, but in the second time, his speed of ascending became much slower.

He felt as though he was plunged into the deep ocean, every step he took was extremely arduous and long, the terrifying pressure came from all directions, and he could hear his own bones cracking. His heart trembled. His body could be hailed as being refined from molten metal and steel, and could be said to be a tyrannical body under the Heavens, but even so, he still felt the discomfort. If it were any other person, they would have been pulverized into mincemeat.

After confirming his guess and ascending by over 30m, Tang Tian no longer forced it, and relied on the pressure to descend down to the ground.

Upon falling, Tang Tian felt the pressure instantly disappear, the Holy Flame that had converged in the sky like a school of fish had returned back to the Pillars of Punishment.

He shook his head towards Qian Hui and Ah Xin, hinting to them that it was futile to resist.

Many people witnessed Tang Tian's test in the sky, and the expressions on their faces changed. One of the bodyguards who bragged about his own strength also flew up into the sky like Tang

Tian, but upon ascending 10m, his body suddenly exploded like a watermelon, and the flowing Holy Flame in the sky were like vultures that had caught sight of prey as they instantly flocked to the corpse.

In the blink of the eye, the bodyguard's flesh were disintegrated by the Holy Flame, and being satiated, the Holy Flame scattered back and returned to the Pillars of Punishment.

Everyone who witnessed the bloody scene was beyond shocked.

"We were indeed all caught in one net!" Huo Liu Shang's face was ash green.

Everyone finally understood the use of the Pillars of Punishment. The Saint Continent had transformed into a large trap, and everyone was caught within in it. The divine and imposing Golden Holy Flames were like the devil's flames in everybody's eyes.

Howl's face revealed shock and fear: "The Great Clan Elder is crazy! He used this to seal the entire Saint Continent, how many Clan Elders have to die for it?"

"How many?" Mo Yi Gu snorted: "I think all of them are dead! But what's the use of trapping us? Aside from the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights, what other armies do they have? Ha, they want to starve us to death?"

When the others heard him, they relaxed. That's right, although they were temporarily stuck in Saint Continent, but to want to kill them, it required real weapons for slaughter. But Temple's hands was extremely pitiful. As for being starved to death, that was complete nonsense.

Sadra did not speak, and observed the Pillars of Punishment that shot into the clouds. He had his doubts, Where does Great Clan Elder's confidence come from? Why is so sure of himself?

Could it be that the Pillars of Punishment have some other unique features?

It was a pity he did not conduct on any research on the Pillars of Punishment, it was not only him, no one had ever done much study on them. Even in Temple, not many people had tried studying the pillars, the Pillars of Punishment were a method for punishment and rarely used.

Sadra never thought that the Great Clan Elder would actually study and research in such an unorthodox method, furthermore, it looked as though he found complete breakthroughs in it. In the past, there were no information on the Pillars of Punishment requiring human lives to be activated.

Upon thinking about that, Sadra's mood dampened.

The Great Clan Elder was a secretive man and rarely came out of seclusion, and the outside world barely knew him. But Sadra had fought alongside the Great Clan Elder for many years in the past, and he knew that the Great Clan Elder had great passion whenever he found something of interest. When the Great Clan Elder was young, he had spent a great deal of his time deeply immersed in his interest for spirit research. But Sadra had advised him, instead of spending his time on the profound mysteries

the profound mysteries of spirits, he could place his sights on some topics that at least had the hopes of succeeding.

He must have found a complete breakthrough in the Pillars of Punishment!

"Be careful, and pay close attention." Sadra warned: "Stay as far away from the Pillars as possible, they might possess offensive capabilities, especially for those Holy Flames. Send out more people to investigate the surroundings, Temple definitely has something else planned."

He glanced at Tang Tian, his own bodyguard had exploded upon jumping up 10m, but the masked man from the Iron Mask Army had jumped over 30m, but had safely landed. How strong is that man's body?

Sadra was surprised by Tang Tian's performance, and vice versa.

Tang Tian was surprised at the fact that Sadra was able to maintain his cool and send out orders coherently. Sadra is not simple.

To them, it was a good thing, both parties could be said to be temporarily allies, but Tang Tian did not want his allies to be lousy teammates.

Sadra's coolness affected the Aristocrats Alliance, all the other family heads all quickly calmed down and sent out their respective orders.

The armies in their control were all elites, and knew what had to be done, and many sentries were dispatched all around. Although they could not fly at high altitudes, but they could move unimpeded in the low altitude.

What was the most striking was that one of the military general had organized a few soldiers, and were preparing to conduct a test attack on the Pillars of Punishment.

Even Tang Tian and his group were fixated on them, they were curious, Can the Pillars of Punishment be destroyed?

Light auras that filled the sky like rain, brought forth a terrifying shriek as they struck on one Pillar.

But a shocking scene occurred. All the attacks were nullified, and did not even cause a stir.

The military general was unconvinced, he pulled out his entire army and launched a full force attack on the Pillar of Punishment, but to no avail. Regardless of how powerful the energy was, they were all absorbed into the Pillar of Punishment, devoured by the flames.

The golden Holy Flame devoured in silence, the gigantic pillar looked as though it could devour an entire beast. After absorbing the attacks, the Holy Flames of the Pillar of Punishment grew

stronger, and the golden light emitted from the flames grew even more intense.

Everyone, including Tang Tian, all had a change of expressions.

Chapter 917 - A Sense

After Xie Yu An reported his duties to the Master, he left the commander post with a calm expression, yet his heart was filled with suspicion.

He had received the order from the highest command, and did not find it strange. Although he was recently placed in the rear, regardless of being in charge of recruitment or constructing delay lines to slow Mo Xin, he had completed them to perfection, and had outstanding military service.

The very first thing that people did when they saw the orders were to congratulate him, they saw Xie Yu An as an outstanding military general that was bound to be promoted. Master Xie Yu An's promotion was a matter that everyone looked forward to, in the eyes of the majority, nobody's contribution were as big as Master Xie Yu An.

He had long become the idol of the Southern Region.

Xie Yu An was not affected greatly, after the bloody war, he had become much steadier, the medals he carried were soaked in the blood of his comrades, and to him, felt extremely heavy.

And he knew that the highest command had ordered him to return was not to promote his position, but because the war had entered a new phase.

From Gou Cheng WenDao's severe losses from occupying the Shang Continent, to the success in delaying Mo Xin and Qiu Xu Hua, they had dug a deep hole for the Honorable Martial Continent.

But the true reason that led to Southern Alliance holding the advantage of being the first mover was the internal strife for power in the Honorable Martial Continent. Xie Yu An never expected that an internal strife would actually occur in the

Honorable Martial Continent at such a crucial moment. The Honorable Martial Continent's internal strife was so sudden and intense that the amount of rumors and gossips flying everywhere were overloaded.

The internal strife in Honorable Martial Continent was the node of the war, and was the node in which the Southern Alliance turned from defense to offense.

Both parties of the war had realized that the balance of the battlefield had started to tilt towards the side of Southern Alliance, causing a huge transformation of the morale. The Southern Alliance's morale was greatly boosted, and their fear towards the Honorable Martial Continent was completely swept clear, and were optimistic towards the victorious future. The favourable Southern Alliance's prestige became as high as the noon sun. Their enemy was the Honorable Martial Continent, the powerful Temple, and the boost in the Southern Alliance victory made it known that they were equally strong.

Although the battle had not ended, but news of the Southern Alliance had already spread throughout the entire Southern Region. The initially unconsolidated Southern Region, under the incite of the war, finally understood that only by bonding together could they resist and fight against the infiltration of Honorable Martial Continent, and all of them joined the Southern Alliance.

Compared to the rising morale of the Southern Alliance, the morale of Honorable Martial Continent's armies were at an all time low.

Any Honorable Martial Continent army that encountered ambushes or resistance realized that the intensity far surpassed that compared to when the war had just begun, they felt as if they were situated in quicksand. The battle became even more difficult, and if this was not enough for them to lose their morale, then the news of the internal strife within Honorable Martial Continent made their hearts turn cold. Qiu Xu Hua and Mo Xin were the most

affected, the Qiu Family and the Mo Family's actions put the two in extremely awkward positions.

They were hesitant, did not know what they should do, and became even more worried for their futures. If the Southern Alliance won, it would not matter to them, but if Temple won, they would be executed without proper burials.

Gou Cheng WenDao's worries were completely opposite.

In a span of one night, a wide gap that they could not close or guard against had formed between the Three Great Generals

Xie Yu An saw it, they no longer had any enemies behind them, and the focus of the following battle was shifted to the Shang Continent. That was the true reason the High Command had mobilized him back, since there was no longer any rear, for Xie Yu An, a powerful Military General to be idle, it was truly a waste.

Xie Yu An was glad, as a pure military general, he believed that he always had to be in the battlefield, because the battle was extremely important.

It is just that....

Thinking about what he caught previously, the joy in his heart lessened.

When he had reported to Master Bing, he realized that Master Bing had a faint trace of worry on his face. Although Bing had hidden it well, but Xie Yu An realized it. Xie Yu An was extremely worried, The situation is good, why is Master still worried?

Inside the meeting room, smoke lingered about.

Bing's poker face was vaguely visible within the smoke, with ashes all around his feet. He stared at the map on the wall and maintained this stance for a long time without moving. His eyes that looked as though they could penetrate through everything on the map was filled with worry.

His connection with Tang Tian had been cut.

It was not the first time, when Tang Tian landed in the Sin Domain, their connection was abruptly severed. At that time, he was not as worried, and thoroughly managed and developed the Southern Alliance, because he felt that Tang Tian had a way to return to Sacred Saint Galaxy.

But it's different this time.

Tang Tian had met him two days prior, and he listened to Tang Tian's report of the Honorable Martial Continent. Bing felt that the news of the internal strife inside Honorable Martial Continent was an extremely good opportunity, and through the power of the Southern Alliance, they had spread the news far and wide. Even Gou Cheng WenDao and the rest were informed through Bing's channels.

Bing also knew that the decisive battle for Tang Tian and the rest was close, and for the connection between him and Tang Tian to be severed so abruptly at such a crucial moment, Bing immediately sensed danger.

Temple's unfathomable depths and concealed power made people fear them. Bing and Temple had fought for so long, and his knowledge towards Temple and their means surpassed that of others. Regardless if it were Temple's Armies or the Great Generals, every single one of them were extremely outstanding, reflecting Temple's system in grooming talents and building armies surpassed that of other powers.

Even the beasts of the forests would struggle on their deathbed, for a monstrosity like Temple, how could they ever wait to be captured?

The fiercer the beast, the more intense its last struggle. The Southern Alliance had posed a direct threat to Temple, and Bing believed that if he had seen it from miles away, the higher ups of Temple would be much clearer on it, and their counterattack

would be far fiercer than imagined.

With his fastest reaction, Bing sent out a large number of scouts in an attempt to gain clarity on the matter. But he also knew that the problem there could not be dealt with so quickly, he needed time, the sudden change in situation left Southern Alliance no time to react, it was beyond their influence.

Bing could only work hard to speculate and ponder, the possible techniques Temple might implement, and how else he could help Tang Tian and the rest. Tang Tian, Qian Hui and the rest could only depend on themselves with the internal strife in the Honorable Martial Continent, Bing could not do much. But on the main battlefield, am I able to support Tang Tian?

That was what Bing was pondering deeply about.

I need to do at least something Bing set the resolve in his heart. The sudden change made him feel a strange treachery, something he had not felt for a long time.

And when the last Pillars of Punishment soared into the sky, the Saint Continent's sky completely turned golden. There were no longer any sun or clouds, only the golden Holy Flames flowing incessantly and silently.

The soldiers on the ground all panicked, there were people who had tried flying into the sky, but were instantly disintegrated by the Holy Flames. The sky was completely sealed, the Holy Flames located at the estuaries had become denser, where a gold grade warship tried to ram its way through, but upon reaching close to the Holy Flames, the ferocious flames spat out a devilish flaming tongue that struck the warship. The gold grade warship that was hailed for its defense persisted for twelve seconds, before exploding into a gigantic fireball.

The divine and golden Holy Flames burnt every inch of the deck, the expensive, precious and outstanding materials burnt like paper in the face of the Holy Flame. All the crew members, regardless of

those who hid inside the ship or tried to jump, were all burnt by the flames.

The miserable screams and wails only stopped after the last inch of meat was disintegrated.

When the last thread of flames dissipated from the sky, the faces of the people who witnessed the scene were void of blood.

It was too cruel!

"What is Temple trying to do now?" A fat Family Head wiped his perspiration and complained: "We have always followed Temple's orders and never betrayed them before."

Disdainful glares came out from the sides, the fat man was an opportunist, he only waited for benefits and strived to obtain profits from both sides.

But many people agreed: "That's right, why is Temple treating us as the enemies? We have always been loyal to them without a doubt."

Almost all of the family heads were rejoicing in their hearts, although they were ambiguous with their loyalty, they had never publicly severed their relation with Temple. Since they did not do so, they assumed that Temple could not take them down. Furthermore, there were so many families, they reckoned that Temple would not slaughter all of them.

No one believed that Temple would do such a thing.

Temple's victory was in sight, and everybody were trying to perform outstanding services, all of the quick witted family heads understood that the time to reveal their loyalty had come, and they had to standby.

They all felt uneasy, even if they knew that Temple could not destroy every single family, but they could kill one as an example for the rest, Temple had held the absolute advantage, and if they did not kill off a few families, how could they control the crowd?

Every family head was praying that they were not chosen, they discussed in soft voices, how to be able to showcase their loyalty to Temple, how to prevent their families from being the examples.

The Great Clan Elder gazed into the distance. When the last Pillar of Punishment was erected, he kept quiet.

Everything has been laid out, it is time for the harvest.

He did not feel joy at all, but instead, an extreme weight in his heart. He knew that he would be the ultimate victor, he knew that Temple would be reborn as new, but the current him held no joy in winning.

The price he had paid for the victory made him grieve.

All of the Clan Elders, all of the Banner of Knights, had become the bargaining chips for the gamble. Temple had spent blood, sweat and tears on every single one of them, how far had they been nurtured till? After the end of the war, none were left. He did not know how many Great Generals would remain. He also knew that how much it took for the Prestigious Families to grow to where they were, how many talents they had, how much resources they owned.

But everything would be paid to the flames, and burned to ashes.

These ashes would turn into the most fertile soil, where Temple would use to produce new life.

It has to be like this!

The Holy Flame around the Great Clan Elder surged.

In the darkness, Sophie had her chin rested on her hands, as she gazed into the distance while at a loss, as though she was staring into darkness. She did not know why it had turned out like that, like how she could not understand why Sacred Son Charles would have suddenly died, and did not even have the chance to say goodbye.

Another light aura inside a cocoon gradually dimmed, the figure inside the light struggled for his life, but Sophie knew that it was futile. Inside, she watched as all of the lights gradually dimmed down, losing all thread of life.

Every single cocoon that lost its luster meant that one life had been lost, and the chance for it to become a spirit general had disappeared.

Sophie felt cold, as grief overwhelmed her heart. She already knew of the consequences, but so what? Could they have survived, no, will they even survive? For some reason, the grief in Sophie's heart grew. She could give everything up for Temple, she did not lack the determination to fight for Temple, but not in such a manner.

She could not hate the Great Clan Elder, he was her creator, and he was like a father to her, who gave her warmth and love.

No one knew, deep in her heart, there was an intense struggle with the complex emotions, and fear.

The moment when she had awoken, she felt as though her life was filled with misconceptions. It was as though her life was just a bubble, it reflected the beautiful colors, but it was nothing inside, and after the wind blew through a bubble, nothing would remain.

Maybe the spirit generals created do not belong to this world.

Holding the indescribable fear, she suppressed her own feelings, she maintained a distance with the world, where she never crossed the line in her heart, even for Charles. Maybe my life is just a bubble, but I will live this bubble, and hold on for as long as I can.

She always felt that what she did was right.

Until Charles' death, when it made her realize how her self control was a joke.

When the Great Clan Elder wanted the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights, every single one of them who were personally trained

by her, to turn into spirit generals, the only emotion left in her heart was sorrow. For the longest time, she had been worried about the Great Clan Elder's creation of Spirit Generals, whose life would always be grey without a future. Who knew that her worry had come to fruition. It was her first time refusing the Great Clan Elder's order, but like her life and fear, it was all futile.

Temple's last glory actually requires a group of Spirit Generals to uphold, alright, maybe this is our fate.

She did not hate the Great Clan Elder.

When the darkness swallows the light, it also signifies a new day.

Regardless of whether it was the dark or the light, it made no difference to her.

Mace Field Tradings had quieted down, Sadra and the rest no longer cared about Tang Tian, as they focused on consolidating their strength. They knew that after being imprisoned, what awaited them would be Temple's fury. For that, Temple had paid a huge price, causing everyone to be speechless. No one doubted the terror of the killing technique prepared from the huge sacrifice.

The intense fear caused Sadra and the rest to pull back their armies, which was the only way that could let them feel safer.

Compared to them, Tang Tian was much calmer. Although Sadra and the rest wanted to seize power back from Temple, they still held fear in their hearts towards Temple and the Great Clan Elder. But Tang Tian did not, in his eyes, Temple was his enemy, no matter how powerful Temple was, they were not invincible, and he had never looked to Temple optimistically.

Furthermore, he had the God Armor Army with him, Qian Hui, and Ah Xin. His own fighting strength, along with Qian Hui and Ah Hui and Ah Xin's mind made him extremely confident.

But who would had known that the first to discover something

was not Qian Hui, or Ah Xin, but the almost non existent Xiao Ran.

"Young Miss, there's something wrong...." Xiao Ran spoke to Qian Hui softly, she had a strange expression on her face, and her tone uncertain. She glanced at everyone, Why doesn't anyone sense it, could it be my misconception? She was not confident.

In any ordinary day, aside from protecting Qian Hui, her task was to be in the vanguard and to assault enemies. She had more confidence in her fighting strength, but in other aspects, she knew of her inferiority. There was no need to compare with Qian Hui, in her heart, Qian Hui was the Goddess of War. Even Ah Xin, who was usually skiving, held an acute intuition for battle, his mind worked extremely quickly, outpacing her by multiple times.

At the start, she felt discouraged, but then she got used to it. She was used to waiting for Ah Xin who would seek out the problem, and Qian Hui to give the order, at which she would assault ferociously to resolve the battle.

But this time, no one else seems to sense it....could it be that I'm wrong?

So, when everyone's eyes were fixed on her, she became uncomfortable, and anxiously blurted out: "It might be my mistake...."

Qian Hui encouraged her gently: "Xiao Ran, don't be anxious, even if it's a mistake, tell us."

Tang Tian was bewildered, Xiao Ran never had a prominent existence by Qian Hui side, aside from bullying Ah Xin, he did not see her much. Ah Xin was even more surprised. He revealed a sneer, and if not for the Young miss being present, he would have disturbed her.

Seeing Ah Xin's expression made Xiao Ran panic even further.

Luckily for the Young Miss' encouragement, she became braver: "I feel that my strength, has grown."

Strength has grown?

Everyone was startled, even Ah Xin, who had a mischievous look on his face, was stunned.

"Yes, for some reason, I feel that the Holy Flame in the sky is extremely warm. It is a very comfortable feeling, like.....like how it feels to bask under the sun." Xiao Ran tried her best to explain her feeling, but she did not know how basking in the sun felt like, for she had been a Spirit General for too long.

Spirit Generals were not fond of the sunlight.

"Initially, I didn't sense it, but after that, I became worried if there were any hidden dangers." Xiao Ran gradually calmed down, and her words became more fluid: "Then I scrutinized my own body, and realized that my strength has indeed grown."

With that said, Xiao Ran swung the Zanbato in a vertical slash agilely, and a void tear flashed in the sky.

Everyone's eyes lit up, they immediately understood what Xiao Ran meant by being stronger.

Xiao Ran's slash did not produce any sound, and was extremely silent. The usual Xiao Ran could do it, but not as easily and relaxed.

Qian Hui's eyes flashed with a strange light, she suddenly said: "Xiao Ran, go check on everybody."

Xiao Ran was startled, but immediately reacted, she instantly turned and ran off to the Spirit General Army. Qian Hui had experienced countless of battles from the ancient battlefield, and was the Spirit General Army's General, after the long experience, the number of them who followed was reduced to a few hundred.

All of these spirit generals were sieved through a careful selection, every single one was chosen out of a hundred, and were extremely powerful.

After gaining clarity from Xiao Ran's words, Ah Xin checked on himself. His strength had grown, but it could only be realized when commanding an army in battle, his control over his own body could not be compared to Xiao Ran, who was a Spirit General proficient in personal strength.

He suddenly raised his head, his eyes flashed with light: "I think we have found what Temple's killing technique is."

Chapter 918 - The Most Cruel Affair

Spirit Generals, Temple's ultimate move was actually Spirit Generals. It was something that Tang Tian could never have guessed.

The Spirit Generals under Xiao Ran all had differing growth in strengths. The reason for Ah Xin's negligence was because his personal strength could not be compared to Xiao Ran, but with her reminder, he quickly thought about it.

"The Honorable Martial Banner of Knights' commander, Sophie, is a Spirit General. Wasn't there a rumor saying Sophie was a Spirit General created by the Great Clan Elder, from the looks of it, it seems very plausible. The Great Clan Elder most probably holds a way to produce Spirit Generals." Ah Xin spoke, and became extremely focused: "Provided that the Great Clan Elder can produce many Spirit Generals at one go, it explains the situation. All of these Fire Pillars can seal the Saint Continent, and transform the Saint Continent into a battlefield suitable for Spirit Generals. As long as they fight in the Saint Continent, they will be able to hold the advantage, but it means that this is their final and main stage."

His mind worked extremely quickly, he then placed a finger on his mouth and continued: "There is a problem here. The Southern Alliance is very strong and holds the absolute advantage in terms of army power, could it be that the Great Clan Elder wishes to use Spirit Generals to replenish his insufficient forces? If that's the case, then the Great Clan Elder needs to create a lot of Spirit Generals."

"It should be many! If it's too little, no matter how strong Sophie is, they are incapable of fighting against Sadra and the other Family's forces." Qian Hui concluded calmly: "The Great Clan Elder holds a large scale Spirit General production method, that is the most logical guess."

Xiao Ran felt that it was inconceivable: "How can Spirit Generals be produced in a large scale?"

The rest felt that it was hard to believe, they had never heard of such a thing.

Create Spirit Generals? Tang Tian's eyes flashed, he immediately answered: "Spirit Chambers! Spirit Chambers can create Spirit Generals."

Qian Hui and Xiao Ran were at a loss, they had never seen a Spirit Chamber before.

Ah Xin had not expected that Tang Tian was aware of Spirit Chambers, but upon thinking about Tang Tian's relation to Bing, it became explainable. He then explained to the two ladies: "A spirit Chamber is a unique structure of the Southern Cross Army, it can create Spirit Generals, in the case where forces are insufficient. But there are many limitations, furthermore, the Spirit General that is produced are usually not very strong, and is only a contingency."

"It needs spirit cards." Tang Tian said: "The higher the grade of Spirit Cards, the stronger the spirit general as well."

Qian Hui immediately caught the crux of the equation: "Which means to say, the spirit chamber needs materials like a spirit card, to be able to create Spirit Generals?"

"Shattered spirits are also fine." Ah Xin added: "But the more shattered it is, the weaker the Spirit General."

"I understand." Qian Hui nodded: "Which also means, Spirit Generals cannot be created from nothing, but needs shattered spirits or spirit cards as the material, does it need souls?"

"It does!" Ah Xin was extremely confident, there were nobody as clear on the topic of Spirit Chamber as him: "In some sense, souls are lives, and without it, no one can create life."

"If I didn't recall wrongly, the Sacred Saint Galaxy's energy concentration is extremely bad for the production of Spirit

Generals." Qian Hui's eyes gleamed: "Ignoring spirits, even shattered spirits pieces do not exist here. For the Great Clan Elder to want to create Spirit Generals, he requires sufficient materials, and require enough shattered spirit pieces."

Ah Xin scoffed: "It's not easy, but it isn't impossible. Temple has researched on spirits for the longest time, maybe they found a way to groom shattered spirit pieces."

Qian Hui did not refute that idea, then continued: "Just now, you said that while grooming Spirit Generals, ordinarily their strength are average, so is it more difficult to groom out a powerful spirit general?"

"You need a very powerful spirit card to produce a powerful spirit general." Tang Tian thought about Ghost Claw, and instantly felt emotional: "Because only souls with an extremely deep obsession can produce a powerful spirit general. I have once tried to use many spirit cards, but the spirit generals produced had very ordinary strength, and could only move things around."

"It's inevitable when you are producing them in a large scale." Ah Xin added: "In truth a Spirit Chamber transforms the soul into a Spirit General, but how can there be so many powerful souls? Of course the majority of them would be ordinary."

"Even if they have many ordinary Spirit Generals and even if their strengths can be upgraded, but where does Great Clan Elder's confidence in defeating Sadra and the other family's armies come from?" Qian Hui could not understand that: "The Southern Alliance's armies are very strong."

Qian Hui's words were agreed by everyone, they had seen how Sadra and the rest summon their armies, and the results showed their strength. There were many armies on the same grade with the Qiu Offense Army, and that was why everyone felt that the Southern Alliance would win, and not Temple.

"Could it be that there is still some other factors?" Ah Xin

frowned: "It isn't easy to raise the strength of a Spirit General."

Tang Tian suddenly pointed to the golden pillars, the Pillars of Punishment: "It's them!"

Everyone were startled and confused.

"That holy flame is weird." Tang Tian explained: "I fought with one of the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights before, and seen their Holy Flames. But both Holy Flames are different."

"Different?" Qian Hui's eyes lit up: "In what way?"

She knew that Tang Tian's intuition was extremely sharp and unparalleled, he definitely had caught something.

Tang Tian thought for a moment: "The last time, when the Knight was trying to escape, the Holy Flame also turned gold from its original white color, very much similar to the Holy Flames in front of us. I pondered about it but did not understand, until I saw Seuss' soul combust. I then realized it."

Tang Tian's tone turned into a rarely heard seriousness: "The one who thought about this is a true genius. The ordinary Holy Flame is a type of Radiant Energy, an extremely unique and special Radiant Energy. I suspect, the Holy Flame is the true result of Temple's research on Spirits. Holy Flames can incite the body to grow fanatically, but it is very strange, the Clan Elders' bodies are not strengthened, because the power of the physique was used to nourish their souls. But these nourished souls have not experienced any tempering."

Qian Hui thought about it: "What you mean is their souls were fattened up, but not strengthened?"

"Yes! That's right!" Tang Tian nodded, then continued: "We all know that our minds needs to be tempered to grow stronger. For such a soul that has never gone through any tempering, it is practically impossible for them to grow stronger. It's no wonder why I felt that it was strange the last time, the Honorable Martial

Banner of Knights had imposing auras and felt strong, but after fighting with them, they were much weaker than I thought. Now I understand, their spirits and souls were being used as fertilizers. The Holy Flames that have not burnt the soul is used to nourish their physique, to expand their souls. After being expanded for many years, when the Holy Flame burns the soul, the soul assimilates back into the Holy Flame. No wonder they feel different. If I didn't guess wrong, these fiery pillars of Holy Flames not only seals the Saint Continent, but can also greatly strengthen the Spirit Generals that are just produced."

The entire place became silent, everyone was completely overwhelmed with shock by the contents described by Tang Tian. Every single person felt a cold shiver crawling up their spines as their hairs stood.

The souls that were nourished for decades were to be used to feed Spirit Generals.

This cruel truth was extremely harsh to take in.

Qian Hui was at a loss, she muttered: "That's so scary...."

In the corner, Melissa who had maintained silence the entire time turned pale, her entire body trembled, and her teeth trembled so greatly that everyone could hear her.

They all turned to look at Melissa.

Melissa stammered while crying: "Ma-many.....many people all cultivate the Holy Flames...."

Many people?

Everyone were still at a daze and did not fully comprehend the meaning in her words, but for some reason, a bad premonition surfaced in all of their hearts.

Ah Xin was the one who understood, he exclaimed out loud: "You're saying...."

Melissa suppressed her sobs: "Aside from Temple, there are ordinary people who train the Holy Flames. Temple said....as long as one learnt the Holy Flames, they would have the chance to be groomed by Temple, and can work for Temple, and be groomed by Temple, and...."

Melissa lost control over her emotions, tears fell from her eyes, she could no longer carry on as she knelt down on the ground.

Everyone was stunned, no one dared to imagine what it would be like....if what Tang Tian said was true.

Everybody's faces were as white as paper. There was only fear in their eyes.

"They will not dare to do such a thing...." even the brave Ah Xin was stammering at that point in time.

How many people were there in the Saint Continent? No one knew the exact figures, but everyone knew that Saint Continent was the most flourishing Continent of the Honorable Martial Continent, and the most populated. If there was anyone familiar with the figures present, they would have definitely said that the population of Saint Continent was a tenth of the entire Honorable Martial Continent.

No one dared to continue thinking.

"What's that?" Ji Ze suddenly pointed to the distant sky, his voice filled with fear.

Everyone followed Ji Ze's finger, and caught sight of a fist sized Gold Holy Flame, gradually floating above the roofs of the houses on the street, slowly ascending into the sky.

Unknowingly, everyone's mind immediately thought about Tang Tian's guess. Their bodies turned completely cold, as though an electric current had swam through their entire bodies, their necks froze, their bodies froze, everyone looked as though they had turned into statues.

No one ever forgot the scene they witnessed.

One after another, Golden Holy Flames of different sizes floated over the roofs. More and more Golden flames from the ground ascended, like a school of golden jellyfish gradually swimming towards the sea.

Even further in the sky, the densely packed Golden Holy Flames had no end, as though it was a sea of gold.

Wherever they could see, every corner was filled with gold that floated.

The divine and imposing gold color was at that moment, demonic and evil, without any thread of warmth, only endless death.

Everyone was frozen cold. Every single person was someone who had experienced warfare and battles, had seen countless of corpses, blood and flesh. They had initially thought that there was no longer anything in the world that could be as cruel and brutal as the battlefield that could make them feel fear. But the scene before their eyes caused their hearts to tremble.

Every single Golden Holy Flame signified a life.

The boundless Holy Flames occupied every inch of space above them, no one could count how many Holy Flames there were, or how many lives were taken.

Right at that moment, millions of lives, were quietly disappearing, transforming into fertilizer for the golden flames.

No one had ever seen anything more cruel,

Chapter 919 - Collapsed With a Loud Bang

Mu Zhi Xia stood with a grave and stern expression, like a rock that had been eroded by the wind, his appearance was one of hardships, but his interior was still as unshakeable as before. This was the most familiar expression the soldiers knew, one without warmth, one that would constantly remind them of the years of snow and hardship in Wei Ye Guan Continent.

But it was the face that made them feel safe.

Everyone gasped for breath and rested on the boulders, maintaining silence and recovering their strength. The worrying battle progress and the strength of the enemy had formed a heavy pressure that choked all of them, but the determination on their faces never wavered.

After recovering slightly, they started to clean their swords. Affected by Mu Zhi Xia, the soldiers under him loved their ceremonial swords, to the point that all their designs were the same. But they were the Number One Great General's direct subordinated army, although their designs were of ceremonial swords, they were made with precious materials and Temple's most advanced refinement techniques. The cost of manufacturing one was exorbitant.

In the black market, one of these ceremonial swords was priceless, and was a treasure that countless of people sought after.

They were all treasures, with its greatest feature being its durability. These swords could withstand immense intensity of attacks without being cracked. In the history of his army, there had never been an instance where a sword had suffered damage before.

But at that moment, every single sword in their hands were laced with cracks and flaws that could be seen.

The soldiers had pain in their eyes, even their wiping actions were extremely gentle. In their eyes, the swords had been their longest companions, accompanying them day and night.

They had never thought that there would be a day where their closest and most trustworthy companion would be injured.

Aren't you made out of the most precious materials of Temple? Aren't you made out of the most advanced techniques? Why are you hurt?

At the beginning, after every battle, there would be wails of disbelief. But as the number of battles increased, their understanding towards their enemies became deeper, and they no longer cried out in surprise.

Just like how they never ever thought that there would be an army as strong as they were, and there would be a military general that was not inferior to their master in terms of wit and might.

The Southern Cross Army, a name unknown to all of them. The Master had told them, the army belonged to the Southern Alliance. The soldiers had never heard of the Southern Cross Army, but they knew of the Southern Alliance, although they had stood guard in the Wei Ye Guan Continent for a long time and did not participate in the Southern Expedition, they were not unfamiliar with the name, Southern Alliance.

But, is the Southern Alliance really that strong?

That was the doubt they had, If the Southern Alliance holds such a powerful army, how is it possible that they are losing and retreating in the main battlefield?

Alright, that is already old news. They were oblivious to the latest battle situation. Their connection to Temple had been severed, and they stood in the Savage Continent without any support.

It had to be said, they were overly optimistic before setting off,

and the largest variable in the equation was the Southern Cross Army. No one had thought that in the barren Savage Continent, there would actually be a Southern Cross Army, what's more, a Mechanical Army, furthermore, they were extremely powerful.

Their battle plans had long failed, and not only did they not find the Goddess of War, they were stuck in a tangle with the Southern Cross Army. They did not dare return from where they arrived from, because once the Star Door to the Wei Ye Guan Continent was exposed, the Wei Ye Guan Continent would immediately become a dangerous location. Furthermore, with the Southern Cross Army stuck right to their backs, they were never given an opportunity to regroup and defend.

The Savage Army was extremely huge and overwhelming, but Mu Zhi Xia was not worried. On usual days, he took training very seriously, and before moving out, he had instructed the military generals in defense to exercise caution. The Wei Ye Guan Continent's layout was created by Mu Zhi Xia, and he was clear of its durability.

As long as they held up for the initial phase, Temple would definitely send people for reinforcements, and Mu Zhi Xia knew that it would be Jia Ya even with his eyes closed. Who was stronger in defense compared to Jia Ya? And where else but the Wei Ye Guan Continent that could be the perfect battlefield for Jia Ya?

Jia Ya should already be in control of the Wei Ye Guan Continent, Mu Zhi Xia assessed and made the judgement.

With Jia Ya stationed there, the Wei Ye Guan Continent is unbreakable.

Mu Zhi Xia threw the problem of the Wei Ye Guan Continent to the back of his mind, and started to consider about his current predicament.

The Southern Cross Army's strength had exceeded his expectations, he had never thought that his own army would

suffer so heavily. The disadvantage was that they were in the Savage Continent, where every tribe were enemies with him, but it was the opposite for the Southern Cross Army.

He had to bring his own army back, not only because he viewed every soldier as his nephew, not only because he had built deep emotions with the army, but because Temple needed them, Temple needed Mu Zhi Xia's Army!

It could be said that the Southern Cross Army had caught Mu Zhi Xia off guard and broke all of his plans, causing him to fall into a passive state. But he did not lose his rationality and judgement despite being trapped.

They cannot be defeated in the Savage Continent.

Mu Zhi Xia used various methods to throw the Southern Cross Army off his tail. But the enemy's General was so cunning and experienced that it surprised him, his disguises, and feints had all failed. The enemy was always able to see through his plan, and every time, he felt as if he was wearing a reflective shirt that reflected the sunlight, revealing their own position.

He had a misconception that the enemy was an old fox that had gone through ten thousand battles, and relied on his abundant experience. Mu Zhi Xia was greatly puzzled by his misconception, regardless of the Sacred Saint Galaxy or Heaven's Road, there hasn't been a great war, how can such an old freak appear.

Mu Zhi Xia tragically realized that regardless of tactics or battle abilities, the enemy was stronger than him.

He still had an extremely deep impression of the cross light aura that dazzled and created the largest setback for them.

What should I do?

Mu Zhi Xia suddenly realized he did not know what to do. He was suddenly roused, his back had unknowingly formed a layer of perspiration. He knew that he was completely suppressed in all

aspects, leading to his imbalance mentality.

He smiled bitterly.

He had never expected that there would still be an existence in the world that could suppress him in all aspects, leading to his disorientation. This is a bad omen, it means that my confidence is wavering he warned himself.

Although he was completely suppressed, he still struggled to inflict a wound on his enemies. Although his confidence had wavered, he struggled to control the situation and prevented it from collapsing.

His pupils regained clarity, he had always been a resolute and tenacious man, and the setback did not cause him to lose his courage.

He summoned his generals, and called for a short meeting. Through the frequency of the attacks launched by the enemy, he did not even have the time to gasp for breath, and Mu Zhi Xia reckoned that the next wave would be soon. That was another point that Mu Zhi Xia felt was inconceivable, his army had trained extremely harshly and their toughness were unfathomable and could not be compared to. But even on this point, the enemy was still stronger.

The only thing that consoled Mu Zhi Xia was that under the immense pressure, their growth was equally stunning.

At the beginning, they were in terrible shape, and their casualties were alarming. But as time passed, they were still in terrible shape, but occasionally, they could counterattack, and their casualties lessened. If the Southern Cross Army did not belong to the Southern Alliance, Mu Zhi Xia thought that being able to fight with them was not a bad thing.

"Pay attention to our flanks, the last time, we suffered because there was no protection to our flanks. The reason is not because we

did not view it heavily, but because we came apart. I will repeat myself, the duration that we can be apart is about six seconds, give or take. If it were in the past, it would not be considered a flaw, but our enemies are experts. Six seconds is enough for them to launch an attack. They are proficient in assaults, which is what we need to avoid. Remember, once the battle begins, do not give them the opportunity to assault, and maintain the brawl. Do your best to slow the battle rhythm, their tactics rely on a fast rhythm...."

Mu Zhi Xia did not speak fast, he was calm and emotionless, as though he was talking about something completely unrelated to him.

The generals listened attentively, they would always convene in a meeting before a battle. They were able to know how much they lost, what they had not done well etc, which attributed to their fast growth.

With the countless battles, they grew speedily, although they were still at a disadvantage, but their confidence in returning to Temple increased. They were all elites, and Mu Zhi Xia had never been lax in their training, and beat their foundations strongly.

They were like unpolished gems, and high intensity battles with powerful enemies were their best grindstones. They started to unleash their brilliance, and no matter how powerful their enemies were, they never feared them.

They knew that their Master would bring them back to Temple.

They knew that they would definitely claim victory against the Southern Cross Army, just like how they believed that Honorable Martial Continent would claim the final victory against the Southern Alliance.

The predicament in front of us is just a training, that's all.

They raised their heads up and listened to their Master's every words.

Suddenly, without any omen, Mu Zhi Xia looked as though he was struck by lightning, his voice stopped abruptly and he became dumbstruck.

His appearance attracted everybody's attention.

Mu Zhi Xia, who was frozen like a statue, slowly turned his head, and gazed into the distance.

Everyone's heart jumped. It was the first time they saw panic in their Master's eyes. It was the first time they saw fear in their Master's eyes. They saw a loss, the hole of despair.

They followed their Master's gaze, but did not discover anything.

What's wrong with Master? Everyone became worried.

In the depth of his pupils, it looked as though his life was drawn out from him, there were no longer any imposing and strict aura around his body, and he simply looked like an old and drawn-out man.

His white hair turned snow white at a speed visible to the naked eye.

Blood tears started to pour out from his dull eyes, meandering down his face.

"The Saint Continent.....why?"

The man who was as tough as steel, opened his eyes that was shedding tears, and collapsed with a loud bang.

Chapter 920 - Secret

Sorrow enveloped the entire camp.

The Mechanical Puppets rumbled on forward, according to their conclusive experiences, they should be hiding, they should be building defensive lines, they should be protecting their flanks and preparing for the assault. They were already able to face the surging bronze tide.

But no one moved, as though they did not hear anything.

The soldiers surrounded Mu Zhi Xia, some of them sobbing spasmodically while some of them wiped their tears. Their tears had mixed with the sand, and covered their faces. All of them had vacant looks in their eyes, as though their souls had been drawn out, they had lost their spirits, and were just walking corpses.

When the Commander and Old Tang arrived, they looked at each other.

They did not encounter any resistance, so much as a look. Commander and Old Tang became serious, they were unable to believe that the soldiers in front of them that looked like soldiers were the army of elites that fought intensely with them, that brought them injuries and pain.

What's going on?

The two of them became serious without any smiles. For many times, they had unknowingly praised Mu Zhi Xia for his tenacity and brains, and praised Mu Zhi Xia's army countless of times for being tenacious despite their predicament. From the start, they were able to easily strike the Mu Zhi Xia Army, but very quickly, Mu Zhi Xia's army became more and more difficult to fight, causing them more and more injuries.

They were an army with steel like determination, tight and powerful discipline, tenacious fighting spirit, were adept at war

formation and tactics, the only army with a 100% synchronization, and worthy of being the number one army under the Heavens.

Mu Zhi Xia was a worthy and respectable opponent, and the soldiers were worthy and respectable soldiers.

And when they saw their worthy and respectable opponents on the ground, the two did not have any joy in it.

It was not the victory they wanted.

They carefully walked pass the grieving soldiers, and saw Mu Zhi Xia, laid out on the ground, with blood stained eyes that smeared all over his jade like body, and were shocked. They finally knew why the soldiers had lost all their resistance, Mu Zhi Xia was the spirit of the army, once something happened to him, the army was no longer the number one army.

Old Tang knelt down, and with a serious expression, he checked on Mu Zhi Xia.

Both parties had fought for so long, and appreciated one another. The reason why Mu Zhi Xia was completely suppressed by the Southern Cross Army was not because of his standard. On one hand, he was but one army in enemy's territory, not only did they have to face against the Southern Cross Army, they had to be cautious of the Savage Continent tribes. On the other hand, experience. Mu Zhi Xia had taken command over a few decades, but had not experienced a proper large scale war, to fight with the old Commander who had fought his entire life and was a monster that had gone through the baptism of large scale wars, how could he ever compete?

But Mu Zhi Xia tenaciously withstood their attacks and struggled and grew, even causing the Old Commander to feel pressure.

"Thank you." Mu Zhi Xia's voice was as weak as a mosquito, but his expression was calm: "Please do not waste anymore time on me."

Mu Zhi Xia's body looked extremely strange, his hair was snow white like silver, the originally hardened hands had turned jade white and smooth. A faint white light leaked out of his body, causing his skin and flesh to look refined. His entire body looked as though it was releasing a white light.

Old Tang revealed a look of shock, the life force within Mu Zhi Xia's body was not declining, but instead becoming even more vigorous, to the point that it resembled flames that could light up the night. What caused the devastating change in Mu Zhi Xia's body was this vigorous life force. It was constantly burning and corroding Mu Zhi Xia's body.

Even with Old Tang's well verse experiences, he had never seen such a bizarre thing.

"This, is Holy Flames." Mu Zhi Xia said weakly.

The soldiers around him were stunned, they raised their heads, their faces covered with shock and disbelief. Holy Flames, the most familiar thing to them, the technique they had to cultivate daily. How could such a terrifying scene be induced by the Holy Flames? In their hearts, the Holy Flames bestowed them power and courage, and could heal their injuries and strengthen them, and was the mark of their loyalty.

How can it be the Holy Flames?

Suddenly, the soldiers thought about the Pillars of Punishment in Temple, Could it be that Temple thinks that Master is not loyal? Or is it that they think Master has done something disadvantageous to them that they had punished him? The soldiers became worked up, they had followed the Master to the enemy's territory and fought with their lives on the line, Why is Temple punishing the Master so unfairly?

Holy Flames? Old Tang and the Old Commander looked at each other, both of them able to see the shock in each other's eyes.

The blood stains had covered Mu Zhi Xia's eyes, but he could still sense the uproar from the soldiers around him, he sighed: "The Saint Continent is most probably Hell now. We surrender, I will tell you guys everything. Please do not hurt my soldiers, please!"

Everyone was stunned by Mu Zhi Xia's words, even the originally emotional soldiers were all stunned. They did not understand why the master suddenly spoke of the completely unrelated Saint Continent. Furthermore, the Saint Continent was a land that belonged to Temple, there were many armies there and it was the most heavily guarded place in the Honorable Martial Continent, how could it be Hell?

Old Tang and the Old Commander did not understand.

They knew of Holy Flames and the Saint Continent, but they had never placed the two together.

"Rest easy, we do not kill indiscriminately." Old Tang spoke up.

"Temple always had a plan." Mu Zhi Xia's voice was extremely weak, as though his voice could be covered by the wind, and with emotions, he continued: "This plan, stemmed from Temple's research on spirits."

Everyone held onto their breaths, they had a feeling that Mu Zhi Xia's words were going to be about a heaven shocking secret. It was no secret that Temple researched on spirits, even a ten year old child would know, and Temple represented Sacred Saint Galaxy's highest standard in terms of spirit research.

"This plan initially started out with the desire to create Spirit Generals. It did not go smoothly, but after overcoming the difficulties, they succeeded. They created the first powerful Spirit General, the Commander of Honorable Martial Banner of Knights, Sophie."

The soldiers were shocked, So the rumors of Commander Sophie were actually true!

The Honorable Martial Banner of Knights and the Commander, Sophie were revered and held high positions in everybody's hearts. The feeling in their hearts grew stronger, it was a secret, it regarded someone so important, how could it be any ordinary secret?

"After Sophie was produced, she performed outstandingly. Her ability to learn, and her growth, everything was in order. Right at this time, another discovery was made. Temple discovered that the Holy Flame had a unique feature, and that is to be absorbed by Spirit Generals. This method, in a short time frame, could increase the strength of the Spirit General."

"The plan was flawless." Mu Zhi Xia continued: "In a short time, Sophie's strength exponentially increased by ten times, and with one step, became the strongest martial artist of Temple. But then, problems came. Sophie's growth reached a bottleneck, and absorbing the Holy Flames no longer became as effective. Temple researched further, and realized that Sophie's strength had already reached her peak, and to break through, the amount of Holy Flames she would have to absorb was an astronomical amount."

Everyone was completely absorbed into the story.

Mu Zhi Xia felt the Holy Flame flowing within his body, and said: "Thus, Temple started a large scale promotion of Holy Flame. All of you should remember that time, Temple started a series of plans."

The place fell into silence, the words struck them like lightning, and a terrifying guess surfaced in their minds, No way.....no way! How can Temple do that!

As though he could hear their fears, Mu Zhi Xia shattered the last thread of hope in their minds: "That's right, it is as you have guessed."

"Impossible! Since when was Temple like that?"

"T-t-that's too inhumane...."

"Is Temple crazy?"

The silence erupted into an uproar.

Many soldiers hugged their heads, their faces filled with disbelief. Temple had always been their faith, and their god. If these words were not spoken by Mu Zhi Xia, the man they all believed in wholeheartedly, they would have destroyed the man who spoke such blasphemy.

They waited for the uproar to quiet down. Everyone's gaze turned back to Mu Zhi Xia. At that time, no one was emotional any longer, their entire bodies were cold, completely ice cold. The only one who could give them the answer was one man, their Master.

The Master's blood-stricken face was filled with a bizarre holy aura, his face had become slightly translucent, and they could even see the flowing white Holy Flames beneath his skin.

Mu Zhi Xia suddenly recalled the first day he entered Temple, and guessed that he was not more than twelve years old, when the Great Clan Elder was not

Elder was not the current Great Clan Elder. Those were the days where the sun shone brightly, and the Clan Elder had a warm smile to his face.

The pain from his eyes forced him back to reality, the harsh and brutal darkness and the flowing Holy Flames in his body, even the familiar holy aura had pierced into his bones.

"Temple did not do it for Sophie."

Mu Zhi Xia sighed: "After a long time of persevering, and adding that news from Heaven's Road Temple kept coming in, Temple's research on spirits finally found a huge breakthrough. And one of the most important results was that they found the method of overcoming the energy corrosion. That meant that Spirit Generals

could have a long life, almost as if they had an undying body."

When he heard to this point, the Old Commander already got the gist of it.

His gaze became complicated, That's right, Spirit Generals do have a long lifespan. But this long lifespan is a torment, there is no end, how many people can understand that pain? To watch your own friends grow old and die in front of you, the loneliness that lasts for so long, is even more painful than any energy corrosion. The long time that even makes you forget your loved ones, that destroys your best memories, and even your conviction and dreams rot and die, while you remain alone in this world, how sad and painful is that.

Eternal life, heh.....

He laughed bitterly in his heart, that had brought the bitterness and loneliness of time.

"By transforming a human into a Spirit General, it is some sort of eternal life. Although Sophie was successful, but she did not have her memories. The new question was, how to transform a spirit general and preserve the memories. This question did not baffle Temple, who quickly completed it. But, as it goes against the natural order of the world, it possessed enormous risks. The success of transforming into a Spirit General is very low. The first who attempted it was a man who possessed great ambitions and willpower. He decisively gave his life to Temple. He firmly believed that given enough time, he could build a new Temple, a clean and flawless Temple. For this dream, he was willing to take on the risk, even if he have to sacrifice lives. Be it his or others."

"He is, our Great Clan Elder."

Silence ensued.

Chapter 921 - Revenge!

All of the soldiers and military generals were completely overwhelmed by the heaven shocking secret, and were dumbstruck with their mouths wide open. Yes, such content had completely surpassed all that they can ever imagine, even if they had been stunned by many other things.

Even the Old Commander and Old Tang were stunned. Even by hearing Mu Zhi Xia's narration, they could hear the Great Clan Elder's mania and his passion for Temple. The Old Commander became a spirit general after he died, but he never thought that, for the sake of rebuilding Temple, the Great Clan Elder initiated to become a Spirit General himself.

He gave up his own life and took the risk for Temple.

He retracted his disdain, and the ridicule he had towards Great Clan Elder's desire for eternal life, because he had asked himself honestly, What about me?

There was no need for him to lead the Southern Cross Army forever, as long as he was willing to win that war, he would not hesitate for anything. It was not only him, anyone in the army would have done the same.

Life is precious, being able to enjoy the warmth of the sun, feeling the heart beat faster in captivation of the other half, being bound to another. Time is emotionless, cold and fearful. But there are always a few things, a few dreams, that will make a person overcome the longing to live eternally, that will make a person overcome the fear of time, and the person will give everything to keep it close.

The Old Commander kept quiet.

The Great Clan Elder was cold blooded and saw human lives as grass, he was fanatical and unreasonable, but he was him. You

could spurn him, but you're unable to look at him in disdain, you can dislike him, but you cannot despise him.

He was a terrifying opponent.

A maniac so crazy to the point that he did not care about his own life, a cold blooded man who saw human lives as mere numbers, had no fear in the battlefield, and could do anything to win.

"He succeeded." Mu Zhi Xia's voice sounded like it had been overlaid with Holy Flames, it was somewhat imposing, the voice that all the soldiers were familiar with, but at the same time, even Mu Zhi Xia himself hated it and loathed it. The Holy Flames that flowed beneath his skin became even more lively. Everyone was so absorbed into Mu Zhi Xia's words that they did not notice his fingerbones had already been enveloped by the Holy Flame and was melting silently.

Mu Zhi Xia looked as though he did not sense it: "It was only a 10% success rate, but he succeeded. He became the most powerful Clan Elder of Temple, and everyone before him were at his beck and call, his commands became the Temple's. For the sake of not letting anyone know that he became a Spirit General, he became reclusive and used the Holy Flames to shroud himself. Everyone merely thought that the Great Clan Elder was using a unique method to train the Holy Flame, and no one had guessed that it was a Spirit General inside the Holy Flames."

Everybody around had a mix of shock and enlightenment on their faces. Everyone knew that the Great Clan Elder's entire body was shrouded with the Holy Flame, but no one had thought that it would be part of the secret.

Old Tang looked at Mu Zhi Xia, the light aura of the Holy Flames were already spewing out from Mu Zhi Xia. He asked: "Then what is going on with you?"

"Me? This is a different problem." Mu Zhi Xia revealed a bitter smile, the light that criss-crossed across his entire face made him

look strange: "The Great Clan Elder knew that even if he had an endless lifespan, he alone cannot realize his dreams. He needed even more people who saw the same goal as him. I am not born from a Prestigious Family, and was naturally sought out by him, but I rejected it. I did not want to become a Spirit General, this life of mine was destined to be given to Temple, but I hope that I can rest after death. For the longest time, I felt fear, the Great Clan Elder did not punish me, but to prevent the secret from being leaked, he left something inside of me. This thing is acting up now."

"Is there a cure?" The old Commander asked, Mu Zhi Xia was a respectable opponent, he did not wish for such a man to die in such a tragic way.

The Old Commander was one of the old generation, in his beliefs, a heroic man like Mu Zhi Xia, should die on the battlefield, and not to some secret and underhand plot.

"There is no cure." Mu Zhi Xia replied: "He will not make such a mistake."

The Old Commander knew that Mu Zhi Xia was talking about the Great Clan Elder.

"The Saint Continent, what happened to Saint Continent? Master, you said something about the Saint Continent just now?"

Suddenly, a soldier asked urgently. By his side, the other soldiers all had anxious looks. Their families were in the Saint Continent, and they could not help but have a bad premonition.

Mu Zhi Xia kept quiet, he opened his mouth, but he felt the pain stabbing in his heart, and could not say anything.

"Master! Please!" The soldier knelt on the ground, kowtowed, and started begging: "Master, this subordinate has followed you for so many years, please tell us."

"Master!" All the soldiers of the Mu Zhi Xia Army all knelt down,

they implored.

Mu Zhi Xia laughed: "The Saint Continent, is no more. I know they have a plan, but I do not know the minute details. I only know about it roughly. Once Temple is forced to a corner, they will disregard everything and transform into Spirit Generals, after that...."

The air around seemed to congeal around them, and time seemed to have stopped. The Soldiers dared not breath, as they looked at Mu Zhi Xia with their pale white expressions.

"After that, they will use all of the Holy Flames in the Saint Continent, to evolve."

Mu Zhi Xia spoke out with a trembling voice, it was filled with sorrow, and he did not know how he still had the strength to say those words.

It was as if he could see his own family members transforming into sad white holy flames, being devoured by a Spirit General.

Blood continued to stream down his face and flowed to the ground.

"No....." The soldier was in shock, his mind had gone blank. He muttered: "No way. We fought for Temple, we are Temple's people, how can Temple do such a thing to our families...."

The other soldiers hugged their heads, their eyes were all in a daze, while a few revealed fear and despair.

"The seed they planted in me has activated. I can feel that Saint Continent is no longer what it is, our families...." Mu Zhi Xia laughed. He felt that he had been too stupid, he had given his life to such an organization, and even his family members' lives were placed on the table.

His heart was filled with hatred, hatred for himself for joining Temple, for fighting for Temple, for implicating his family.

He had occasionally heard of a few pieces of news, but never placed them in mind. Because he felt that, as long as the Great Clan Elder was rational, he would never implement the plan. The Saint Continent was Temple's foundation, where their citizens lived in, even all their devout followers and Temple's families and kin. If Temple implemented the plan, weren't they digging up their own foundation? Who would dare to follow after Temple, who was even willing to harm their own flesh and blood. Who would still follow them?

Although the Great Clan Elder is crazy, but he is an intellectual man, and would not do such a foolish thing.

I am the foolish one!

It was I who had harmed everyone!

But a pity, I can't take revenge....

The surging Holy Flames spewed out from his body. In the blink of the eye, he had transformed into a burning person, the white Holy Flames blazed on intensely. Mu Zhi Xia could feel his own body becoming lighter and lighter, the pain from the burning of his soul caused his consciousness to fade out, and he gathered his last ounce of strength, and shouted out while trembling.

"Revenge! Revenge! Revenge!"

Bang!

The Holy Flame erupted and completely devoured Mu Zhi Xia, who became silent within the flames.

All of the soldiers were stunned, they pounced fanatically towards the Holy Flame, wanting to drag Mu Zhi Xia out.

Old Tang and Old Commander reacted quickly, they immediately blocked the soldiers who had lost control of their emotions. The berserk Mu Zhi Xia Army disregarded everything, they begged, bit on the mechanical puppets, kicked and punched, with tears streaming all over their faces.

"Don't harm them." Old Tang was not able to do it, and reminded his soldiers.

The Southern Cross Army were all quiet, no matter how many of the enemy soldiers crawled up their mechanical puppets and bit onto their armors, they simply held onto them, they too, were feeling extremely terrible in their hearts.

The Holy Flame surged, in the blink of the eye, Mu Zhi Xia's corpse was burnt completely, and nothing was left in the flames.

All the soldiers of the Mu Zhi Xia Army stopped, as though they were in a trance, they stared at the empty Holy Flame.

Heart wrenching screams and wails came out.

The soldiers who had climbed up the Mechanical Puppets were ragged and covered in smoke and dirt, got out from their frenzied states. They cried and screamed, they climbed down from the Mechanical Puppets and fell into the dirt.

Their faces were buried in the dirt, their palms grabbed onto the soil tightly, they screamed out their family member's names, they screamed for they screamed for Mu Zhi Xia. They wanted to grab onto something, but did not grab onto anything, they struck their own heads, they curled up together, they felt useless and felt despair.

They could accept dying on the field with their corpses being thrown into the wilderness. That was their responsibility in which they could not hide from. But their families had become fertilizer for Temple, helplessness, grief, and despair overwhelmed their hearts.

All of their beliefs and thoughts were shattered, they knew that their families had died, and they watched as their highly respected master burned to ashes in front of them. These strong men who survived through countless of ordeals and were never defeated in battles before, completely crumbled at that moment.

Old Tang and the Old Commander revealed their sad emotions, it was a brutal reality, and the tragic scene was something that even their hardened hearts could not accept. Especially when they heard the soldiers screaming out the names of the females of their families, the heart wrenching screams and wails, it became so unbearable that they had to turn their heads.

This is the most cruel affair in the world.

It is the most insane thing ever!

All of the soldiers had went to the frontlines to fight, to fight for Temple, but Temple actually harmed their families!

An unprecedented rage surged in the hearts of every single generals and soldiers of the Southern Cross Army. Even if they were their enemies, at that moment, they all shared the same hatred towards one man, and all of them so badly wanted to cut the Great Clan Elder piece by piece.

They sympathized with them, they were all soldiers who had gone out to war, thus the feelings were especially deep.

The Old Commander watched the most elite soldiers with empty eyes, who cried endlessly, and felt terrible. It should not be like this, all of these strong men, should not be like this.

He took a deep breath, then thunder boomed from his mouth: "All of you shut the hell up for me!"

All of the soldiers instantly raised their heads.

"Have all of you forgotten Mu Zhi Xia's wish before dying? Have all of you forgotten the ocean deep hatred on your backs? Have all of you forgotten who the main culprit is?"

Old Commander's voice thundered through the battlefield, and in the hollow eyes of the soldiers of Mu Zhi Xia army, light auras started to converge.

"Revenge! Revenge! Revenge!"

The Old Commander looked around, his killing intent soared to the sky.

Chapter 922 - Looking for a Breakthrough

Endless tents of the large army extended into the distance, the large Savage Army's tents were all made crudely, and forming over the distance, they looked like moss covering the snow plains.

Jia Ya glanced once, then retracted his gaze.

Although the large army outside looked threatening, the Savagers revealed their astonishing physiques, they were unafraid of the cold and the wind and snow did not affect them. But Jia Ya did not care about them, regardless of how many Savagers there were, as long as the Wei Ye Guan Continent was in his hands, he had the absolute confidence of repelling them away.

He was only worried about the situation at the Saint Continent. He had a calm personality and did not like power struggles, although he came from a Prestigious Family, it was a small one. The Jia Family had a similar temperament to his, they were reserved and kept low key, preferring to live quietly without causing trouble for others.

He knew of the long friction between Temple and the Prestigious Families. But he felt that the Honorable Martial Continent was big enough, and both parties were able to share it. If they could not, they could expand outwards like what they were doing with the Southern Expedition. Compared to internal strife, he felt that fighting a war was much simpler. He also knew that he was naive on this, thus he never liked to participate in such matters. Furthermore, he knew that regardless of which side won, they would still want him. His standard and qualifications might not be noble, but he would still be able to live well.

But he felt that the Families had gone overboard.

The Families move at such a critical juncture had greatly affected the Southern Expedition, so much that it could lead to the utter defeat of the Southern Expedition. All for their self interests, Jia

Ya could not resist but sigh. To the majority, the Families' move showed that they completely ignored the big picture. But even Jia Ya could tell that they had no other choice, as if the Southern Expedition became a success, the Great Clan Elder would use the momentum of victory and make the first move to cleanse the Families.

Jia Ya did not understand when Temple and the Prestigious Families reached such a stage of no return.

But to Jia Ya, the Families had done the most foolish thing, and that was the assassination of Sacred Son Charles. Like how there was the rumor of Sophie being created by the Great Clan Elder, there was another widely spread rumor regarding Sacred Son Charles being the Great Clan Elder's illegitimate son.

Jia Ya knew the inside story.

Sacred Son Charles was not the Great Clan Elder's illegitimate son, but was the Great Clan Elder's nephew, and was the only kin and successor to the Great Clan Elder. Very few people knew of the matter, even Jia Ya had accidentally stumbled upon the knowledge, but had never spoken about it.

When the Families had assassinated Sacred Son Charles, what they did not know was that from that point on, the Great Clan Elder would never cooperate with them.

Jia Ya's greatest worry was that the Great Clan Elder would react irrationally. Jia Ya was a man of few words, where even in the most crowded of banquets, he enjoyed sitting in the corner with a cup of wine in hand.

The quiet people always discovered fine details that others would not notice.

In everybody's eyes, The Great Clan Elder was mysterious, authoritative, farsighted and omnipotent. But Jia Ya had sensed the Great Clan Elder's deeply concealed fanaticism.

Upon thinking about the matter that Mu Zhi Xia had once told him before, he became even more worried. To have his only kin in the world killed, even the Great Clan Elder he....

Jia Ya firmly believed that everyone in the world had some sort of restraints, anyone who had no restraints would easily be able to do incomprehensible and fanatical things. And if such a person was a powerful martial artist, or held unmatched authority, it would certainly be a disaster. Upon thinking about the Great Clan Elder, Jia Ya revealed a bitter smile.

The only thing that made him feel more reassured was the Great Clan Elder's emotions and loyalty to Temple, that was the most genuine thing.

Suddenly, a subordinate rushed over to him in panic. Jia Ya suddenly had a bad premonition surface in his heart, the subordinate was one that he had specially sent to the Saint Continent to receive reports, he did not wish to interfere with the Saint Continent, but he had to know about the matters in there.

The subordinate walked over to his side and spoke softly: "Master, the Saint Continent was suddenly sealed."

"Sealed?" Jia Ya's heart jumped, it was a serious matter. He replied softly: "Which fleet sealed Saint Continent?"

There were many estuaries to Saint Continent, and for someone to be able to seal Saint Continent, they had to rely on a large fleet.

"It is unknown." The subordinate had obviously rushed over without taking a rest, his voice was extremely coarse: "It's Holy Flames, golden Holy Flames. All of the Estuaries have been blocked by the Holy Flames. Someone tried to barge through, but was burnt to ashes."

When he said that last sentence, he thought back about the horrifying scene, his voice could not help but contain nervousness.

Holy Flames? Jia Ya was startled, he never thought that the one

to seal Saint Continent would be Holy Flames. If it's Holy Flames, then it must be Temple, who else could use Holy Flames to seal the estuaries?

W-wait! Golden Holy Flames! Jia Ya immediately thought of the Great Clan Elder, in the entire Temple, the only one with Golden Flames was the Great Clan Elder.

Jia Ya immediately recalled Mu Zhi Xia's words, and the blood in his face instantly receded.

The current Saint Continent was already in chaos.

The countless golden Holy Flames floating in the sky was extremely majestic and beautiful. On any ordinary day, the aura of the Holy Flames was extremely calming, but on this day, the Holy Flames released an extremely divine and suppressive aura, which was as cold as the winter wind, causing everybody to feel chills creeping into their bones.

Every Holy Flame represented a dead person.

The Families were already in a mess. They trained in their family inheritances and techniques, and never touched the Holy Flames. But, regardless of who it was, all of them felt insignificant in the face of the sea of Holy Flames, they felt as though their lives were not in their control, and felt immense fear.

The instinct to live caused them to struggle. They tried various methods, wanting to find a way to live. But anyone who were infected by the Holy Flames would burn to ashes. As long as they were touched by even an inch of flames, it was impossible for them to remove the flame no matter how they tried, the Holy Flame would burn until their souls disappeared, before disappearing.

Luckily, the energy barriers still had some use, the golden holy flames emitted an immense pressure, every flame would exhaust a great amount of energy. The endless sea of Holy Flames caused

everybody's expression to be ugly as despair filled their hearts. The only thing that they could rejoice in was that the Holy Flames were not manipulated by anyone, and floated in the sky. The Energy barriers could sustain for a period of time, which was a silver lining to them.

The former bustling Snow City had turned silent, there were no howls of anguish or sounds, as though it was a dead city.

Only the area around Mace Field Tradings had signs of life.

Tang Tian and the rest were working hard and conducting tests, but they were different from the other survivors, what they tested were Spirit Generals. Although they had grasped Temple's intent, that did not mean they had escaped. The atmosphere was extremely tense as everyone knew that if they did not find a way before the enemy became stronger, they would be in true danger.

No one was completely sure of Temple's attention on Spirit Generals, but no one doubted it. Tang Tian had showcased his resolve, as he threw in everything onto spirit generals without hesitation.

Xiao Ran and Ah Xin were carefully experiencing the Holy Flames.

Temple had spent a great deal on the formation, and sacrificed countless of lives, thus the Holy Flames had to be an indispensable use in the plan.

Holy Flames could strengthen Spirit Generals, that was the easiest connection conjecture.

Xiao Ran's spirit generals all had low intelligence, although they could listen to orders, but to get them to try gaining enlightenment was simply playing the lute to a cow. Only Xiao Ran and Ah Xin could unravel the secret of the Holy Flames.

The God Armor Army was sustaining the protective barrier, completely reduced to manual labor. But it was a helpless matter,

without the protection of the energy barrier, everyone would be in danger.

Luckily, although Ji Ze and the rest were not adept with energy barriers, they had started to show signs of improvements under the high energy concentration on mobilizing Law Threads.

They easily controlled the energy barrier. But not long later, they started to feel slight difficulty.

"The energy concentration is dropping!" Ji Ze shouted out: "Wait, No! The Holy Flame is transforming all the other energy attributes to Radiant Energy!"

Everyone's expressions became even more serious, Temple was truly merciless, they completely gave no opportunities for anyone. The Holy Flame transformed all energy in the air to Radiant Energy, not only would this weaken their enemies, but it would strengthen themselves, it was truly killing two birds with one stone.

Even for Ji Ze and the rest, it was too taxing to purely use Laws to defend without energy.

The atmosphere became even more tense, everyone felt the immense pressure.

Sima Xiao gritted his teeth and summoned Magatama, and joined in the ranks of unravelling the Holy Flames. Magatama's aura was gentle and reserved, which was completely opposite of Holy Flame's light aura, causing Magatama to have an instinctive fear towards the Holy Flame.

But at that moment, every ounce of additional strength had become important.

Sima Xiao hardened his emotions and gave Magatama the order. Magatama looked at him, her charming eyes clear was water. She did not say anything, and floated towards a small regiment of Holy Flame.

Magatama's glance was like a blade piercing into Sima Xiao's heart, he felt extremely terrible, he bit on his lips, and forced himself to not tear up.

When they were in Scorpio Constellation, Magatama had helped him take the place of the Scorpio King, but Magatama was simply a tool in his eyes, an extremely useful tool. But after going to Sin Domain, Magatama became more alive, and his emotions towards Magatama had since changed.

But at that time, even her strength was required.

Tang Tian could not help with the Holy Flames, thus he placed his attention on another crux, he started to study the Pillars of Punishment. Not only could the Pillars of Punishment seal the entire Saint Continent, it had locked down the sky, prevented people from flying. In battles, the ability to fly was extremely crucial. Being unable to fly meant that the person would instantly hold a disadvantage at the start of the battle, an extremely large disadvantage. The enemy could completely occupy the high ground and launch attacks indiscriminately.

If they were able to destroy the lock from the Pillars of Punishment, they would be able to fly, and that would greatly impact the results of a battle.

Tang Tian carefully dodged the Holy Flames around him and arrived to the side of a Pillar of Punishment.

The large and thick fiery pillar shot into the sky, and when he got close to it, he was able to sense its loftiness.

Tang Tian quickly had a discovery.

When he was near the fiery pillar, the sovereign and imposing aura that the Holy Flame possessed was lessened, and what replaced it was a unique undulation.

Tang Tian was surprised, he felt a sense of familiarity with the unique undulation, as though he had seen it before. Tang Tian

racked his brains, as he tried to search his memories, attempting to look for where he had seen the undulations before.

He had a premonition that it could potentially be a breakthrough!

Chapter 923 - Predicament

Tang Tian finally realized where the unique familiarity came from, the Forbidden Hoop!

The Forbidden Hoop was the first technique that aroused Tang Tian's interest after he entered the Honorable Martial Continent. The Forbidden Hoop was Claudia's bodyguard, Hank's, own creation. In the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy, although Hank was not very well known, but his own creation, the Forbidden Hoop, was a marvel, which made Tang Tian interested.

It was able to change the density of the space, which created the imprisonment. The low energy level resulted in a marsh like result. With the two effects added together, it became extremely effective in handling the martial artists of the Sacred Saint Galaxy.

Tang Tian became even more brazen in creativity when he studied it, thus making it even more advantageous for himself, he was able to form a Forbidden Hoop like area around his entire body, and prevent his own undulations. He used his enlightenment from the Forbidden Hoops to move through the battlefield like a ghost.

With Tang Tian's current strength, there were very few opponents that required him to use the technique. Even the number of people in Temple that had strength surpassing his was countable. His research on the Forbidden Hoop was more on his interest in its creativity, but he had hardly used it. Thus when he studied the Pillars of Punishment, he never placed his thoughts on the Forbidden Hoop.

Furthermore, the power of both parties were of completely different levels, when Tang Tian was sealed inside the Forbidden Hoop, it was rather easy for him.

After he probed the power of the Pillars of Punishment, the terrifying pressure that was released from the sky, made him feel

fear. There were already very few powers that could cause Tang Tian to feel fear, and in comparison to it, the Forbidden Hoop might have been a creative technique, but in terms of its quality, it was not much to mention.

It could be said that both were completely different levels of power. But when Tang Tian connected the two, he immediately realized their similarities.

Of course, the Pillars of Punishment were much more complicated than the Forbidden Hoop. In some sense, both had common principles. After "Disassembling" the Forbidden Hoop, Tang Tian had some rewards. For example at the start, he had thought that the seal of the Pillars of Punishment and the sky were formed by the Holy Flames, but from the experience of the Forbidden Hoop, he did not stick to this conclusion.

The seal system formed by Temple had three parts, the Pillars of Punishment, the Holy Flames flowing in the sky and the Holy Flame floating in the air.

The five hundred odd Pillars of Punishment formed the skeleton of the setup, the foundation. Its most important feature was not the supply of Holy Flame, but the resonance.

Resonance between the Holy Flames.

The five hundred fiery pillars that released Holy Flames, produced the same resonance undulation that covered the entire Saint Continent, that was how it was able to form the entire fiery barrier in the sky of Saint Continent.

Tang Tian felt admiration towards the Great Clan Elder, the Saint Continent was an extremely large area, and to completely seal the Saint Continent, the locations of the fiery Pillars were extremely crucial.

Every position of the fiery pillar was chosen after meticulous planning and selection, which meant that Temple had long

planned for it.

Such a large scale and cold blooded plan was not initiated on the impulse, but through deep and careful deliberations, and everything that the Great Clan Elder did was linked to it. The Great Clan Elder's cold bloodedness and craftiness was extremely terrifying.

That was also why, since the Great Clan Elder started moving, he held onto the upper hand on the battle.

Due to the undulation formed by the resonance of the fiery pillars, the holy flames that spewed into the sky never dissipated, but flowed along the sky and formed a screen of flames. Forming such a screen was not difficult, in which any considerably strong army could actually achieve it. But to form one that could cover an entire continent, and for it to cover the Saint Continent, an immensely large sized continent, was something Tang Tian had never heard of before.

Even the Holy Flames that filled the air was an important factor of the seal of the continent, and was a killing technique that the Great Clan Elder had placed.

At the start, Tang Tian thought that they were just for the Spirit Generals. After that, he realized that he was still underestimating the Great Clan Elder. All of the Holy Flame were continuously transforming the energy into Radiant Energy, and to the disciples that had trained in their families' martial techniques and inheritances, the amount of energy that they were compatible with would get lesser, which was similar to the Forbidden Hoop's low energy activity.

But he had to admit that the design was invulnerable and completely tight.

No one had to fear a lunatic, but everyone had to fear a cautious lunatic.

In truth, the Families no longer had the opportunity to turn the tables, they never thought that even before they had strategized well, their enemy would have already implemented his long drawn out plan to wipe them out. The immense number of Holy Flames continued to transform the energy in the air into radiant energy. As the amount of energy that they could use got less after time, Sadra and their armies would lose their fighting strength. They would feel like fish that had jumped out of water, feeling choked, and even the ordinary energy barriers that they could usually execute easily would become tedious and difficult.

Inside the Sacred Saint Galaxy where energy was extremely dense, 90% of the people had never experienced an atmosphere with thin energy. The Great Clan Elder's drastic measure had struck at their weakness, causing them to be unable to have a counterreaction.

The less brave people had already started crying, the scene of the Holy Flames burning all over the place had struck their morale.

What the Great Clan Elder had overlooked and would have never expected was Tang Tian and his group.

Tang Tian and his group had brought variables into his complete and cautious plan.

Tang Tian and the rest were equally feeling immense pressure, the longer they dragged, the more disadvantaged they became. If they were not able to successfully "unravel" the secrets of the Holy Flame before the Great Clan Elder produced the Spirit Generals, they would be dead.

Even for Tang Tian, who was not afraid of anything, upon thinking about a group of Spirit Generals being able to absorb all the countless Holy Flame in the air, his scalp turned numb in fear.

What kind of monster will be born from the millions of lives of Saint Continent? Tang Tian was unable to even imagine that!

Tang Tian threw all of these thoughts away, he had encountered a problem. He had roughly clarified about the system used to seal Saint Continent, but he realized that he could not do anything. The Great Clan Elder's system was even more brilliant than the Forbidden Hoop, and the use of the high quantity of Holy Flame was truly too terrifying.

Attainment of a qualitative change through a quantitative change. Anything, upon reaching a number that hits a critical value, would go through a change, furthermore, it was a dangerous and high level technique such as the Holy Flame.

There were many imperfections between the fiery pillars and the fiery screen in the sky, but the sea of Holy Flames was completely perfect.

Tang Tian suddenly realized that all the problems returned to one thing, the Holy Flame!

If they were not trapped within it, Tang Tian would have ran away at the first sign of sign of the Holy Flame. The Golden Holy Flames were not ordinary, and if it was a one against one battle, no matter how powerful the Holy Flames were, Tang Tian would have no worries while fighting. But the Holy Flames in front were Holy Flames produced by the lives of all that lived in Saint Continent, causing the number of Holy Flames to be as vast as the ocean. No one could fight against so many Holy Flames, it was like a sea, and with just one wave, Tang Tian would be destroyed. And if the Holy Flames were to suddenly explode, the entire Saint Continent would burn to ashes. Its might was something that not even the Sea of Energy could contain, which if that happened, the Sea of Energy would combust, and the uncontrollable explosions would form an unprecedentedly huge energy explosion which could sweep through the entire Honorable Martial Continent. No one would know how many continents would be able to hide from such a massive scale explosion.

Just thinking of that scene would cause everyone to tremble in

fear.

Tang Tian took a deep breath, he had started to feel anxious. When was the last time that I've gotten so anxious? He had long forgotten. But on this day, he was truly feeling the sense of urgency, although he knew that the Great Clan Elder would not incite the explosions of the Holy Flame, but he knew that the sea of Holy Flames was something that even the Great Clan Elder might not be able to control.

Alright, why am I worrying about all of this, I'm actually worrying for the Great Clan Elder?

Tang Tian laughed in self ridicule. But the anxiousness in his heart lessened slightly. He began to focus once more, and threw out all the complicated thoughts. Holy Flames are just Holy Flames, I've seen many mystical and strange things as well, much more than just Holy Flames.

After fighting with the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights, Tang Tian had specially studied on the Holy Flame. Holy Flames were flames produced by pure radiant energy, and in Temple, learning the Holy Flame became a strict requirement. They were in the Saint Continent, the land of Temple, and the heart of Honorable Martial Continent, where majority of the citizens related to Temple used the Holy Flame. In any other continents, it was impossible for the Holy Flame to be spread to extensively.

The Holy Flame was the symbol for being loyal, and was viewed as the power of the most pure and divine, and thus what revolved around the Holy Flame became tactics, killing techniques, and a whole large system for combat.

~Since

system for combat.

~Since Holy Flames are produced from energy, is it still an energy? Or is it a type of Law?~

Tang Tian was in deep thoughts as he sat by the side of the fiery pillar.

The atmosphere in Mace Field Tradings was extremely intense.

The God Armor Army were bitterly holding on to controlling the energy barrier, the pressure on them became bigger and bigger, causing the members to feel fatigue. Seeing that the situation was not going well, Ji Ze gritted his teeth and spoke up: "This is not the way to continue."

"What do you have in mind?" Fu Zheng Zhi was already gasping. His talent was far lacking as compared to Ji Ze, and he was much older. At that moment, he felt as if he was already on his last breath. The power of the laws consumed too much from them, causing the blood in his body to stir, and he was on the verge of losing control.

Ji Ze was in a much better condition than Fu Zheng Zhi, he was able to think: "The other energy is getting lesser, but the radiant energy is increasing, are we able to use the radiant energy instead?"

Fu Zheng Zhi was startled, he was stunned by Ji Ze's wild idea.

Upon hearing his words, Qian Hui's eyes lit up: "What do you have in mind?"

Ji Ze threw off all mannerisms and spoke up: "I don't know anything about the Honorable Martial Techniques and their Laws, but it is definitely some kind of Law, will it be related to Light Laws? Xiao Yao, don't you train in Light Laws?"

The member who was called Xiao Yao laughed bitterly: "Boss, I train in Light Laws, but it has no relation to them."

"If you don't try it out, how would you know?" Ji Ze replied without hesitation, at such a time, they could only try things out in desperation and not care too much, they had to do things beyond their ability.

Xiao Yao also knew that they were in a critical juncture, the energy barrier

Without caring for much, Xiao Yao shouted: "Then let me try, but I can't do it alone, get a few more people to help me."

Ji Ze immediately called out: "Bring five men with you!"

Five other members that still had strength walked to Xiao Yao, the fewer head count caused the energy barrier to tremble, and the other members who were supporting the energy barriers felt their entire bodies become heavier as the pressure increased on them.

Everyone's eyes all fixed towards Xiao Yao and his gang.

Chapter 924 – Nascent Spirit Generals

The last cocoon opened, and a tall and sturdy spirit general walked out.

He walked to the Great Clan Elder, bowed down and called out: “Great Clan Elder!”

The Great Clan Elder nodded his head in satisfaction, he looked at the 12 Spirit Generals in front of him, feeling extremely pleased. The situation was much better than he had expected, the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights were all strong individuals and had trained in the Holy Flame far more profoundly than any others, and the number of successes were higher than his expectation.

“From today onwards, you will be the Temple’s Twelve Honorable Martial Saint Knights!”

The Great Clan Elder was fully content with his achievement, and was filled with spirit. Although twelve Spirit Generals did not seem much, but all of them had retained their intellect, and each one of them could assume personal responsibilities. In their previous lives, they were the most elite Banner of Knights, where every Knight was chosen through layers of selections, all of them had overflowing talent, and regardless of strength or tactics, they excelled above their peers. After turning into Spirit Generals, their potentials were all preserved, yet their strengths were amplified by over ten times.

They became the true core of the new Temple, and became The Great Clan Elder’s most loyal servants and subordinates.

“The light will prevail!”

The twelve Spirit Generals bowed and roared.

“I have already prepared the most nutritional food for all of you, where you can all enjoy a feast.” The Great Clan Elder’s voice came

out through the Holy Flames, and spoke as if he was talking about an ordinary matter.

By the side, Sophie's body turned slightly colder, she had realized the strangeness ever since the first Spirit General appeared from the cocoon. Every Spirit General acted as though they did not recognize her, and never looked at her. It was different from usual, all of them were personally chosen by her and were groomed by her, and their feelings and relationship with her were at an extremely deep level. But after turning into Spirit Generals, they acted as though they were looking at air when they saw her.

Her emotions had fell to rock bottom, she maintained her silence and did not speak a word.

“From today on, you are all Gods, Gods of Temple. All of you must remember, there is only one reason for your existence, and that is to obey my orders. Give up all of your meaningless emotions of the past, all of that ridiculous pity and cheap kindness. You must all remember, only the light is eternal, and aside from the light, everyone else is the enemy! The will of the light cannot be violated, any hesitations or impurities are all blasphemies. We must build a whole new Temple, to lead us all into the new world of light, and no one else can stop us! We will live forever!”

Every word of the Great Clan Elder were filled with supreme awe, and in front of him, the twelve Spirit Generals had their heads bowed as they listened.

Sophie's body trembled faintly, for some reason, the scene in front of her made her feel fear.

The Great Clan Elder spoke again: “Go, go and enjoy the feast of light, and enjoy the process of turning into Gods. The next few days will be unforgettable in your lifetimes. Oh, my apologies, the term lifetimes no longer apply to all of you.”

The twelve Spirit Generals bowed respectfully and walked out in a line.

“They don’t recognize me.” Sophie suddenly spoke up.

The Great Clan Elder replied: “They only need to remember what they need to remember. They will recognize you in the future.”

Sophie no longer said anything, she did not know what to say, and only felt cold. It was not a terrible feeling, just a slight cold, Charles was gone, only twelve of the Banner of Knights remained, they had transformed into Spirit Generals, and treated her like a stranger. Why does it feel so cold? I am a Spirit General as well, maybe those things are things that I am not worthy to have. Is that why I am destined to lose them?

“You don’t need to stand guard here.” The Great Clan Elder looked at her from the flames, and felt that there was something wrong about Sophie, he thought for a moment, then spoke warmly: “Don’t you worry, they just turned into Spirit Generals, their foundation is still weak, you will temporarily command them. You must also make full use of the time, don’t let them catch up to you. They were your ex subordinates, if they surpass you, you better not cry about it.”

The Great Clan Elder did not forget to crack a joke, it showed how pleased he was.

“Yes.” Sophie replied, then walked out.

Temple, which used to be bustling with activities, had become deserted and empty, and was bleak and desolate. She stopped and looked at the empty Temple, and let out a sigh. She could not understand, If there isn’t anyone left, what is the point of rebuilding Temple? We can no longer see all of those familiar faces. Her emotions were at a down low, she quickened her footsteps, at that moment she did not wish to stay any longer.

Maybe Temple will be rebuilt, yes, like what the Great Clan Elder said, it will be a new Temple, a Temple completely not related to me.

If only I had left the world with Charles, Sophie quietly thought. When the comrades that she had fought alongside with for many years walked out of the cocoons with their unfamiliar gazes, it made her realize that she had lost another precious thing.

Charles is gone, the Banner of Knights has disappeared, they no longer recognize themselves, and they only exist for one purpose.

Sophie laughed in ridicule silently, What wishful thinking, all that about living in this world, what qualifications does a Spirit General have, to say such words.

She walked out of Temple, the street that used to be heavy in traffic and bustling with activities was completely empty. Dang, Dang, Dang, the melodious bell sound came from deep within Temple, it was the bell that chimed at specific hours. In the past, as long as the bell was rung, everyone on the streets would raise their heads, revealing their faces that were filled with worship as they prayed devoutly.

But, there's nothing left, only the Holy Flames exists now.

The Holy Flames in the sky resembled snow, or like dandelions floating in the sky, it was a rather beautiful scene.

She stared blankly at the sky, feeling disgusted with herself.

Warships and trading ships filled the entire space of the Sea of Energy outside the Saint Continent. Everyone became anxious, they had heard of the internal struggle between Temple and the Families, but they had never expected for Saint Continent to be sealed. The Golden Holy Flames were like a terrifying monster that occupied the estuaries.

At the start, there were a few warships, with their outstanding defense, that tried to rush into the Saint Continent. But after the over ten warships had transformed into ashes, no one else dared to rush in. A few others waited in considerations of people coming

out of Saint Continent to negotiate, regardless of who had the upper hand, there were always people willing to negotiate. But even after waiting for a many days, no one appeared.

Everyone became even more anxious, their families were in the Saint Continent, and they did not know of the situation inside, or if their families were safe and sound.

There were some who became impatient, they formed up together and constructed a warship purely equipped with defense, with the thoughts of rushing into Saint Continent. This warship was much more durable than the other warships, but it still burnt into ashes, and not one of them survived.

After that, no one else dared to even think about entering the Saint Continent.

All of the estuaries of the Saint Continent were wrapped up to the point that not even water could flow in or out.

When Du Ke rushed over, he witnessed such a scene.

=The battle at the Desolate Continent had ended, and no one else in the Honorable Martial Continent had the thoughts of heading over to the desolate corner. Du Ke, upon being free from battle, instantly took the initiative to leave to the Saint Continent to support Tang Tian. Du Ke's knowledge and wisdom surpassed many others, he was extremely resourceful, and when the Holy Bell rung, he guessed that Tang Tian had moved towards Saint Continent. Du Ke was also extremely interested in the Saint Continent, Temple was their mortal enemy, and the Saint Continent was the main headquarters of Temple, thus he wanted to increase his knowledge by making a trip there.

=Du Ke moved through the days.

=His individual strength was unparalleled, as the only powerful martial artist of the Sin Domain who had gained enlightenment on Law Domain, he had sufficient ability and confidence.

=In the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy, the number of people who could pose a threat to him were very few.

=He hurried over to Saint Continent with high spirits, but was shocked by the scene in front of him when he arrived, the dense mass of warships and trading ships overcrowded the Sea of Energy. But when he noticed the Holy Flame at the estuary, his excited heart quickly calmed down. Especially when the few warships were burnt to ashes, the expression on his face became even more serious.

=Du Ke was a knowledgeable man, and although it was his first time witnessing the Golden Holy Flames, he knew that it was something special.

=He quickly thought of another question, How are Tang Tian and the rest doing inside?

=Thinking about that, he immediately decided to investigate and get to the bottom of it. In Du Ke's heart, he felt that the Sin Domain had received the greatest kindness from Tang Tian, and without Tang Tian, they would have never been able to leave Sin Domain. Du Ke was an open and honest man, he was conscientiously aware of Tang Tian's grace, and had always been wanting to repay the favor. His decision to be under Tang Tian was also because of it.

=After that, what made Du Ke feel helpless was that, not only were they unable to help Tang Tian, they were continuously under Tang Tian's care, and the favor became heavier and heavier.

=After that, Du Ke became numb to it, and threw the problem to the back of his head, and no longer raised the thoughts of how to repay Tang Tian.

=But the scene before him made him realize that Tang Tian might be in possible danger, and he could not sit still. For a martial artist with a strength equal to his, one would never go back on his words. Immediately, Du Ke decided that, regardless of the price, he

had to ensure Tang Tian's safety, even if he had to give up his life, he would not hesitate.

=But Du Ke was not impatient, he did not rush in impatiently. He arrived before the estuary, and secretly observed and analyzed the strange yet terrifying golden Holy Flames.

=Ultimately, Du Ke was an absolutely powerful martial artist who had gained enlightenment on law Domains, and with regards to understanding of law or the understanding of the world, he was far more capable than any ordinary man. He brazenly took a bit of Holy Flame and studied it intensely. He quickly obtained some results. It was his first time encountering such a flame, and he roughly understood the dao to it.

=He admired the creator of the Holy Flame to the point that he could prostrate himself before the creator. The Golden Holy Flames had extremely queer characteristics. The most unique was that it had many different forms, and under certain circumstances, the Holy Flame could transform. For example, it could become extremely tyrannical or violent. And at some times, it was extremely gentle, and could heal wounds. But many more times, it revealed a warm quality.

=But what caused Du Ke to be surprised was that it was not energy, or law.

=It was a product of being between energy and Law, and could interchange into either one, at the same time had the different attributes of both.

=~What a unique thing!~

=Du Ke's eyes lit up.

Chapter 925 – The Secret of the Holy Flame

Tang Tian sensed the smell of danger.

Up until now, Temple had been extremely peaceful, but under the bizarre peace, it was too abnormal, causing everyone to become anxious.

Tang Tian shook his head, he threw all of the chaotic thoughts to the back of his mind, the more he thought, the more complicated it became. He placed his attention back onto the Pillars of Punishment, but he never thought that after going back and forth, the crux of the matter still ended on the Holy Flame. The repeated setbacks did not discourage him, How could the core of the system be so simple?

In any ordinary day, Tang Tian would have used other methods to slowly study it, for example disguising himself and infiltrating Temple to learn the Holy Flame. To Tang Tian, regardless of what power it was, they were all different means to the same end. His understanding towards the Holy Flame was just a small slit through a window pane. But it is through the continuous probing of the small slit would it lead to a sudden enlightenment, and and if one did not prod through the confusion, one would always be looking at the flowers in the fog.

Time continued to pass, Tang Tian knew that the more he delayed, the more disadvantageous it was for them, he no longer cared about it, and decided to use the most dangerous method.

His gaze landed on a regiment of Holy Flame in front of him, the golden Holy Flames slowly churned, like a pure golden lotus.

He took a deep breath and activated the God Armor. The golden and beautiful armor flowed along his body like a golden liquid, and countless of profound Law Threads appeared. The golden liquid that resembled a squirming living thing, completely covered Tang Tian's face, while Tang Tian's eyes suddenly became indifferent.

The current Tang Tian emitted an extremely indifferent and inhuman aura, like a lifeless machine.

Clad with his full armor like a God of War, Tang Tian's aura surged into the sky. Inside his cold pupils, countless of lines moved endlessly, the power in his body revolving to its maximum.

He extended a finger and touched the Holy Flame.

Upon coming in contact with Tang Tian's fingers, the Holy Flame instantly emitted an extremely tyrannical and blazing hot aura, it flowed along his finger into his body.

Being enveloped with the God Armor, Tang Tian remained unfazed as he carefully sensed the Holy Flame. In his eyes, the entire world had become completely different.

The golden holy flames floating in the sky looked as though they were trapped within a sunken large net, there were faint lines that resembled a net around the golden Holy Flames. Tang Tian was familiar with those lines, they were Spatial Law Threads. While wearing the God Armor, Tang Tian became extremely sharp towards Laws, he noticed that the sunken regions in the space between the Holy Flames resembled voids, they were so dark that it caused his heart to jump.

Tang Tian could clearly see through the burning Holy Flame on his fingertip. The distorted void around the Holy Flame looked like a vortex, and any energy that entered its radius would be devoured. This layer of distorted void was an extremely thin layer, but it was able to continuously absorb energy.

Every time the golden Holy Flame spat out a fiery tongue, a small amount of pure radiant energy that resembled raindrops would spew into the sky.

The Holy Flame is indeed not Law!

At that moment, Tang Tian had already judged that the Holy Flame was not a type of Law, nor was it a form of energy.

Tang Tian quickly noticed another peculiarity of the Holy Flame, the Holy Flame's ability to devour energy was extremely strong, and regardless of what type of energy it was, the Holy Flame would effortlessly devour it, then transforming it into pure radiant energy. It could be said that energy was the Holy Flame's favourite food, but detested Laws.

The God Armor was formed out of Law Threads, and the Holy Flame that had been absorbed was trying to infiltrate the God Armor with all of its might, as though there was some great hatred between the two.

It was Tang Tian's first time encountering such a scene, in the blink of the eye, the Holy Flame was put out, and on Tang Tian's fingertip that was covered with the God Armor where the contamination had occurred, a gray spot had formed.

It was the first time a change occurred in Tang Tian's indifferent eyes.

He flicked his finger and shot the gray spot out into the air. It started to melt at a speed invisible to the naked eye, before completely disappearing.

The laws that were at where the gray spot was formed were all broken, no, they were destroyed!

The Holy Flame's ability to devour energy did not surprise Tang Tian, but he had never expected the flames to be able to destroy Laws. Law Threads were easily disconnected from interference, but they were extremely difficult to break, much less destroy. In the state of the God Armor, the variations of laws could not escape his eyes, and he could see that the Law Threads at his finger were truly destroyed.

Completely destroyed.

How can Law Threads be destroyed?

Tang Tian was filled with doubts, but he did not relax the caution

he had to his surroundings, and suddenly noticed a peculiar scene. The Holy Flames that floated within a distance of 10m around him suddenly flew towards him. From the beginning, the Holy Flames that floated in the sky were all extremely slow, even the rhythm of their flames churning and blazing were at an extremely slow tempo, making them look extremely graceful. But the Holy Flames that flew towards Tang Tian became like sharks that had caught the scent of blood, they flew extremely quickly and ferociously.

What's going on?

Tang Tian squinted his eyes, his body moved as he dodged the Holy Flames that flew towards him. Although the range was extremely small, but Tang Tian was not mistaken. Seems like my God Armor is seen as a hostile entity by the Holy Flames, Tang Tian's mind worked extremely quickly. It was expected that the Holy Flames adored energy, but its hatred for Laws and its ability to destroy them was surprising.

Tang Tian immediately realized that this unusual attribute was most probably the crux to unravelling the Holy Flame.

After finding the crux of the problem, what followed on was the investigate down this line, to be able to find the answer. Tang Tian did not panic against the Holy Flames that pounced towards him, and started to twist and turn in the 3m region around him. He did not wish to provoke even more Holy Flame, and carefully controlled the scope of his activity. Although it was a radius of 3m, Tang Tian moved extremely smoothly, although the Holy Flames were fast, they still paled in comparison to Tang Tian. The flock of Holy Flames danced around Tang Tian like a school of bees, the scene was extremely dazzling, but not one were even able to touch Tang Tian's clothes.

Tang Tian maintained his evasion, but took the opportunity to initiate an interaction with another Holy Flame.

The instant the Holy Flame touched his body, Tang Tian's abyss

like eyes suddenly gleamed with a bizarre light aura, and without any omen, his aura suddenly erupted. The air around his body suddenly congealed, and the dancing Holy Flames suddenly became sluggish, as though they had charged into glue.

Tang Tian's cold glasslike mental state worked at an unprecedented speed, and broke down the scene in front of him continuously.

In that moment, time seemed to have suddenly slowed down.

The Golden Holy Flames grew larger and larger in his eyes, and every single changes that happened at the location where the Golden Flames had interacted with his God Armor appeared extremely slowly.

The speed at which Tang Tian's mind worked increased endlessly, the light aura from his eyes burnt even brighter, to the point that no one could look at him straight in the eyes. Mist started to permeate out from the God Armor, and rose in the air. The vast power of the physique within Tang Tian's body started to work, and surged into Tang Tian's mind. Under the God Armor, a blood light blossomed from Tang Tian's neck, and thickened at an alarming rate. If Tang Tian was in a conscious state at that moment, he would had felt as if he was placed in a stormy ocean, with majestic rumbles thundering in his ears.

He had never dared to work so much of the power of physique in his body.

The Power of the Physique was different from energy, it was a water body preserved deep within a sand dune, they did not flow smoothly like rivers, but were mixed with the sand, and were extremely coarse. Mobilizing the power of the physique required restraint, otherwise, the flesh body would wither and would never be able to be restored.

But at that moment, Tang Tian's power of the physique moved by itself. The vast power of the physique surged into Tang Tian's

brain, the light from his eyes became brighter and brighter, to the point that they were as bright as the moon, and continued to shrink to its maximum. Even the beautiful God Armor's light dimmed in comparison to the light from Tang Tian's eyes.

Every detail occurring between the God Armor Laws and Holy Flames were revealed as clear as day in his eyes.

The entire process moved in slow motion, but in reality, it happened in an instant.

Another gray spot appeared on the God Armor, and in the blink of the eye, the gray spot was destroyed, revealing a gap. The light in Tang Tian's eyes dimmed down, the imposing aura around him also disappeared. The God Armor crumbled, and disappeared into the air as light dots. This was the first time the God Armor had crumbled after Tang Tian had gained enlightenment on it. Although the timespan in which everything had happened was extremely short, but the consumption was humongous, far more than what Tang Tian had expected. Even the God Armor could not persist, and directly crumbled and dissipated into the air.

The Holy Flames that revolved around Tang Tian suddenly lost interest in him, and scattered.

Tang Tian's face was as pale as paper, his fingertips were trembling, his legs were weak, but his usually calm and clear eyes were filled with an unspeakable joy.

He had finally discovered an important key.

The Holy Flame was not energy or Law, it was a product between the two.

Tang Tian had to admit that the Great Clan Elder was a true genius.

Tang Tian had witnessed ordinary Holy Flames before, and the white Holy Flames and Golden Holy Flames were two completely different things. The Golden Holy Flames appeared on the Great

Clan Elder. Before the Great Clan Elder, in the history of Temple, there had never been anyone who had trained out Golden Holy Flames. Furthermore, it was only after the Great Clan Elder took his position where the mass release of Holy Flames occurred, which meant that entire system only formed from the Holy Flames as the core.

In the past, when Melissa talked about it, Tang Tian never bothered thinking about it, but at that moment, after verifying it, he finally understood how powerful the Great Clan Elder was!

The Holy Flame was something that laid between Energy and Laws, or in other words, it was a result of a unique integration of the two.

The White Holy Flames was just pure radiant energy.

Any ordinary person would think of how to combine Energy and Laws, and that only required using Laws as the backbone and the energy as the flesh for one to be able to form a stable composition. In some sense, that was how Ji Ze and the other Sin Domain martial artists used it, with Laws as the skeleton, they absorbed the energy into the flesh.

But obviously, the Great Clan Elder did not do that.

In that instant when the Golden Holy Flame and the Laws of the God Armor were destroyed, Tang Tian “saw” that within the Golden Holy Flames, there was dotted figure that collided into the Laws of the God Armor.

This should be the key for their destruction.

What surprised Tang Tian was that the dotted illusion’s form was extremely similar to that of Law Threads.

In that instant, Tang Tian had a misconception, as though the Law Threads was pouncing on its reflection.

His heart jolted, What’s this?

Chapter 926 – Piercing Through The Window Pane

At the start, Tang Tian thought that the dotted figure was some unique Law Thread, because the dotted figure was in the shape of a line as well, and was extremely similar to Law Threads. Tang Tian was extremely familiar with Law Threads, and the form of the dotted threads were truly similar to that of various Law Threads.

But very quickly, Tang Tian had another guess. He carefully thought about about the minute details that he captured, and found many new discoveries.

The mysterious dotted shape was truly identical to Law Threads, but the only difference was that it was like a reversed image. That's right, Tang Tian remembered the feeling clearly. Especially at the moment when the dotted line and the Law Thread had collided, the feeling became extremely obvious. If it were any ordinary men, they would definitely had felt confused, Where did the inverted image of the Law Thread come from?

Tang Tian trusted his senses, his intuition was extremely sharp, and could usually grasp all the minute details that others would overlook, which had been proven through countless of battles.

It isn't a misconception, what was it?

Tang Tian pondered, he had not narrowed his train of thoughts. The Golden Holy Flame was in itself an illogical existence, where there were even a few abnormal things that were more normal than it.

The scene of the collision played over and over again in Tang Tian's mind, he concentrated his mind on it.

After persevering unremittingly, Tang Tian finally understood why he would think that the reflected image would be an illusory like Law Thread. The dotted line was truly a mysterious and in a

form that was hard to describe. Although Law Thread were difficult to catch with the naked eyes, but the fact remained that they existed in between the spaces, and it coincidentally turned out that the image in the void was on the opposite, they existed within the space. In terms of carving stamps, Law Threads were the solid protruding lines, while the dotted law threads were like indented lines.

It was Tang Tian's first time encountering the "Indented lines" of Law Threads, and gasped in surprise.

No wonder they will get destroyed upon colliding, they are like yin yang opposites, representing two extremes, which will naturally be annihilated upon collision. That was the reason why the Holy Flames would react like sharks that had caught the scent of blood when Tang Tian activated the God Armor Army, and would flock to him, while Ji Ze and the rest were not affected. That was because although Ji Ze and the rest used Laws, but they used the Laws to control the Energy. In other words, Ji Ze and the others Law Threads were enveloped with a layer of "Flesh", and that was energy. As for Tang Tian's God Armor, it had no energy wrapped around it, and was naked in the air, naturally, the Holy Flames would be attracted to him.

After clarifying it, Tang Tian felt that the Great Clan Elder was a true genius.

Tang Tian's arrangement of this idea and understanding of the Holy Flame was just separated by a thin layer of window paper. Now that the window paper had been torn through, Tang Tian could roughly guess the Great Clan Elder's plan.

Projection!

The Great Clan Elder should have placed Law's Projections into the energy, these dotted figures are not real Laws, but emulated Laws projected in the energy. The projected Law and the pure radiant energy are actually able to form some kind of stable

composition, it is truly a marvel. This Emulated Laws have difficulty forming in energy, but in the purest and most tyrannical Radiant Energy, it is actually able to stabilize.

Tang Tian could imagine the joy the Great Clan Elder had basked in when he found the unique composition.

Truly a genius! Tang Tian could not resist but praise once again.

After the Great Clan Elder had discovered the unique composition, he obviously did not end his own research.

The miraculous and stable composition contained an astonishing variation. The Emulated Laws that had stabilized inside the pure Radiant Energy started to produce an effect on the Radiant Energy itself. The originally tyrannical and pure Radiant Energy gradually hollowfied, the energy attributes started to weaken, and turned from just energy into a unique mix of energy and law.

(TN: the author used the term 虚化, which in english means being hollowed, or hollowfication, and for those who watch the anime, Bleach, the hollowfication process was translated to this chinese term, thus I will use the term hollowfication or hollowfied.)

This unique form bestowed it unique characteristics.

At that moment, Tang Tian finally understood why the Great Clan Elder had placed his hopes on Spirit Generals.

In some sense, Spirit Generals were also some sort of mixed product, a unique state between life and death. To Spirit Generals, the Holy Flame was a great nourishment.

Tang Tian who understood this point was instantly vitalized.

The only obstruction that prevented Xiao Ran and the rest from absorbing the Holy Flames was the radiant attribute of the Holy Flames. The pure Radiant Energy was an extreme type of energy, and to spirit generals, it was equivalent to poison. Although the Radiant Energy in the Holy Flame had been hollowfied, and its tyrannical attribute had gone through a great change, there were

still attributes of the Radiant Energy remnants left behind.

The Spirit Generals transformed in Temple were naturally extremely compatible with the attributes of the Radiant Energy, that was how they were able to absorb the Holy Flames without obstruction. But for Xiao Ran and the rest, absorbing the Holy Flames was extremely difficult, the Hollowfied Holy Flames might even harm them.

On the contrary, the Radiant Energy spewed out by the Holy Flame, after hollowfication, was much gentler, and far thinner than the Holy Flames itself, thus Xiao Ran and the rest were able to absorb them without getting injured, and can even nourish themselves.

But the amount of Hollowfied Radiant energy in the air for absorption was too little, while the Temple Spirit Generals were able to directly absorb the Holy Flames, Xiao Ran and the rest could only absorb the thin Hollowfied Radiant Energy, the speed in which both parties could get strengthened were heaven and earth apart. In that way, they were still in a difficult situation.

Tang Tian did not know what monsters would be produced after absorbing the sky full of Holy Flame, their numbers were truly too terrifying.

But, since he had clarified the principle, Tang Tian naturally believed he could find a solution.

The Great Clan Elder's originality was worthy of respect, but in terms of the utilization of Laws, the only one who could match with Tang Tian was Du Ke, who had gained enlightenment on the Law Domain. The difference was Du Ke relied on his understanding of Laws, while Tang Tian relied on his God Armor.

Regardless of what they relied on, winning was still the most important at such a time.

Tang Tian did not allow himself the habit of skiving.

His brain worked quickly, Xiao Ran and the rest are unable to bear the attributes of the Radiant energy in the Holy Flames, but I can. With his extremely strong physique, he was not afraid of the pure Radiant Energy, much less the hollowfied Radiant Energy. On this point, even Du Ke could not compare to him, that was how powerful his physique was.

I can serve as the bridge, no, filter.

I will pass the Holy Flames through my body, and I can absorb the attributes of the Radiant energy left inside the Holy Flame, or keep them or dispel them, while the rest can be absorbed by Ah Xin and the rest.

In truth, Tang Tian himself felt that the idea was a bit too brazen.

But in the life and death battlefield, if one did not even take risk, they could simply wait to die, as risk and rewards will always be directly proportional. Furthermore, to even be able to come up with an idea was already a positive thing. It was all thanks to Tang Tian that they could use such a method.

If he did not have a terrifyingly strong physique, he would truly be seeking death. And if he did not have the God Armor that gave him the strongest control over Laws, he would also be seeking death.

Although the method looked to be extremely risky, but in theory it held a great possibility of success. Of course, the Holy Flame saw Tang Tian's God Armor as an enemy, and he had to think of ideas to bypass that problem.

It had to be said, under pressure, a person's potential will be easily incited. Tang Tian realized that his mind was working faster than normal even without activating the God Armor.

Xiao Yao trained in Light Laws, and although Light Laws and

Radiant Laws were just a word apart, they were extremely different. Being helpless in the dangerous situation, he could only harden his skin and agree.

(TN: Light laws is 光之法则, pronounced guang zhi fa ze, while Radiant Laws is 光明法则, guang ming fa ze.)

He stood at the side of the energy barrier with five other comrades behind him, all of them had stood in formation, with serious expressions on their faces.

“I’m starting.” Xiao Yao took a deep breath, and reminded the comrades behind him.

With that, he extended his palm out of the energy barrier and closed his eyes, the vigorous Radiant Energy outside of the energy barrier made him scared witless. The concentration of the Radiant Energy was higher than his expectation, and was not a good thing to him.

As he was unfamiliar with the energy, the higher the amount, the more problems could surface, and the energy concentration outside had already reached a staggering level.

Xiao Yao forced himself to focus, and gradually used the power of his Laws.

A gentle white light aura lit up at his palm. The light grew visibly stronger, as beads of perspiration covered Xiao Yao’s face, and very quickly, the light became the size of a grindstone. Everyone inside the building watched on anxiously, the large regiment of light contained an astronomical sum of energy, and if it exploded, the consequences was unthinkable.

Luckily, the explosion that everyone were worried about did not appear, the light seemed to melt, the white light aura flowed along the energy barrier that Ji Ze and the rest were sustaining, and it made the energy barrier look as though it had an additional layer of white membrane.

Very quickly, the white membrane covered half of the energy barrier, Ji Ze and the rest all revealed looks of joy, as long as the white membrane could cover the entire energy barrier, they would have formed a Radiant Energy Barrier.

Suddenly, Xiao Yao spat out blood, it was as though he was struck by a hammer, he flew backwards.

The comrades behind him were shocked, they subconsciously went to grab onto Xiao Yao, who had already fainted, with blood flowing down his mouth.

The white light membrane covering the energy barrier shattered

Everyone's expressions became extremely terrible, but right at that moment, they saw Tang Tian return, and everyone heaved a sigh of relief.

"I have an idea, but it requires taking on some risks."

Upon entering the energy barrier, Tang Tian spoke up, at such a time, they no longer had time for an accurate explanation, every minute they wasted was a minute longer of danger.

Qian Hui replied without hesitation: "Alright!"

She had unconditional trust in Tang Tian, and firmly believed that Tang Tian would not joke in a life or death situation.

"Then start quickly, we don't have much time." Ah Xin spoke up directly.

At that moment, everyone placed all their trust on Tang Tian. Tang Tian was moved, but did not delay: "Ji Ze, persist a bit longer, I need a bit of time."

Ji Ze gritted his teeth and nodded his head: "Master, just do your thing!"

After giving out the orders, Tang Tian no longer spoke, and sat cross legged. He needed time to recover, he had exhausted a great deal of his strength, and he still required to use the God Armor,

which could not be activated without physical strength.

Time slowly crawled by, but Tang Tian remained unmoved with his eyes closed.

Although it was extremely anxious time, Tang Tian remained at rest, and did not rush to begin. He knew that only by being in his perfect state would there be a chance of success, he could not force it, as it would only cause the situation to become worse.

Furthermore, he took the time to rest to formulate his train of thoughts and all the details carefully.

The initial plan that was in its embryonic form, was perfected.

Chapter 927 – Activation

When Tang Tian opened his eyes, the energy barrier's aura had dimmed, and was even on the verge of collapse. Only half of the God Armor Army members remained standing, the others who were exhausted laid on the ground on the verge of fainting. As for Ji Ze and the rest who were barely struggling on, they were also at their limits, their faces were pale white, their bodies drenched in perspiration, and were trembling incessantly. Some of the members even had traces of blood at the corners of their mouth.

It was the first time they were in such a difficult predicament ever since the formation of the GOD Armor Army.

“Remove the Energy Barrier.”

Tang Tian's order was extremely brazen, but Ji Ze and the rest did not hesitate at all, and immediately dispelled the energy barrier. Everyone opened their eyes wide, some watching Tang Tian in anticipation and curiosity. Ji Ze and the rest knew of their Boss' talents, but Ah Xin and Xiao Ran had not witnessed his true capabilities. At the Qiu Offense Institute, Tang Tian had initially wanted to deal with it personally, but Ah Xin was the one who stole the limelight, and everyone were able to witness Ah Xin's spectacular performance.

Qian Hui's eyes lit up as she held her breath subconsciously.

Ever since they were plunged into danger, she had maintained her calm. She felt that there was not a need to be worried, as she had her Big Brother Tian with her. She too, did not understand why she felt that way, maybe it was because when they were young, Big Brother Tian always protected her by her front heroically? She was always filled with confidence towards Tang Tian, the confidence that had no origin, just like how everyone in Andrew Academy thought that Tang Tian, who only knew fundamental martial techniques, was a joke, but she still felt that

he was very powerful. Just like how they did not pledge any undying love, yet she was still filled with anticipation and confidence towards their future, there was no reason or logic behind all of it.

Her mouth involuntarily blossomed into a smile, her sparkling eyes never left Tang Tian.

Even if we do not succeed, to die by Big Brother Tian's side, is a blessing.

The only regret she had in her heart was that she never did managed to help her Big Brother Tian, she was proficient in commanding battles, and her individual strength was far from Tang Tian's. She never had a chance to command a battle after meeting Tang Tian, and thus never managed to display her skills.

But all of these regrets disappeared in the blink of the eye. With Big Brother Tian around, it is fine.

The mask on Tang Tian's face had been melted by the God Armor laws long ago. He did not have a handsome face, but like a magnet, it had firmly attracted her gaze. Compared to the Big Brother Tian from her childhood memories, the face in front of her was slightly less obstinate, with a bit more maturity and calmness, but the seriousness and resolute look was still the same as the past.

Tang Tian sensed Qian Hui's gaze, he thought that Qian Hui was afraid, and revealed a smile at her.

Qian Hui immediately reciprocated with a sweet smile.

Tang Tian retracted his smile and became solemn, his eyes became focused as he stared at the Holy Flames floating in the sky. Everyone's safety were in his hands, and at that moment, he was bearing a huge pressure. They only had one opportunity, he could also only activate the God Armor once, and if they failed.....

Tang Tian thought silently, Then we will lose everything.

Including everyone that was with him that were accounted for,

the Southern Alliance that would fail in the war would be devoured by Temple, even the fates of Three Spirits City and Ursa Major Constellation would also fall towards the abyss. Everyone's experiences from so many battles, everyone's achievements from their perseverance, would all disappear into smoke if they lost.

Tang Tian closed his eyes, he could hear his own heart beating, it was as anxious as everyone else, like a fast beating drum, it beat so fast that it caused his entire body to feel slightly numb.

Godlike young lad.....

He muttered in his heart, to himself.

He had not shouted out the name "Godlike Young Lad" for himself for a very long time, he was no longer the weak young man of the past, he had begun to look down on the entire world, he was able to move unhindered in all directions, he started to become a leader, to become a sovereign king.

But deep within the deepest depths of his heart, he was still that fearless young man. The feelings that he had not felt for a long time surged into his body like lava, igniting the thirst of all the veins and arteries that had slumbered for a long time. An indescribable excitement scattered to every corner of his body like electric currents, and the initial anxiousness that made his heart beat faster, was the fuel that help ignited his willpower that blazed.

He was like a dragon that had slumbered for ten thousand years finally being awoken, and was eager to show off his fighting spirit to the world.

Tang Tian opened his eyes, deep within the abyss of his pupils, flames were ignited.

"Godlike young lad....."

He spoke to himself, just like how he did back when he was in Star Wind City as he looked into the valley.

He used all of his energy, burnt all of his emotions, without restraint and disregarded everything as he told himself he wanted the answer!

“.....go go go!”

Like a storm that had brewed in his heart, like the sun that released warmth, like how he was when he was young.

All the anxiousness were instantly thrown away, he flew to the sky above the estate. He activated the God Armor once again, the gold liquid flowed along the outline of his body, and Tang Tian's mental state immersed into the unique state once again.

The moment the God Armor was activated, all the Holy Flame immediately flew towards him like sharks.

But right when they were about to touch Tang Tian, their speed suddenly slowed down, they had lost their target!

Along Tang Tian's outline was a thin layer of energy barrier that he had congealed. This thin layer of energy had isolated the aura of the God Armor. Tang Tian stared at the Holy Flames around him, they were once again floating leisurely after losing their target, like jellyfishes floating in the ocean.

Prey, Tang Tian's eyes flashed with a cold light, all of the Holy Flames that were like jellyfishes had unknowingly turned into Tang Tian's prey.

When he was resting, Tang Tian had been perfecting his plan.

By projecting Laws into the energy, then using the “indented” laws to hollowfy the energy was fundamentally altering the nature of the energy. This was already breaking away from the category of normal techniques, just like how the Holy Flame could no longer turn into energy or Laws, it was a brand new, unprecedented form of power, and was what made the Great Clan Elder truly powerful. Creating a brand new martial technique and creating a brand new power were two completely different things.

Even Tang Tian's Zero Energy Body could not compare to this, his Zero Energy Body did not leave the category of Power of the Physique. Even for Tang Tian's God Armor, although it was an interesting new creation, but it was not a completely new power.

If not for the Great Clan Elder's frenzied and unprecedented brutality, just by relying on the Holy Flame, his achievements would earn him eternal glory.

Both parties were at odds, and although Tang Tian admired the Great Clan Elder, his mind was only thinking about how to defeat him.

The Great Clan Elder had absolute confidence in his own Holy Flames, which could be seen from the fact that all of his plans revolved around the Holy Flames. His self confidence was well deserved, one had to know that even after promoting the Holy Flame for so many years, no one had ever discovered the secret of the Holy Flame. Regardless of whether it was the Clan Elders of Temple or the enemies of Temple, even the local Prestigious Families all thought that the Holy Flame in itself was Temple's secret, and the Great Clan Elder had refined it the most.

But the Great Clan Elder would had never expected that the world would actually have Tang Tian.

Tang Tian felt extreme admiration towards the Great Clan Elder, but he did not know that he was a freak to others as well. Zero Energy Body, a Law refined body, Awakened God Armor, the God Armor Army, all of it was created by him. After witnessing various strange powers, Tang Tian's mental capabilities and foresight was no longer the same as before. While others feared the Holy Flame, he had already grasped the principles behind the Holy Flame, and was filled with admiration towards the Holy Flame and Great Clan Elder.

Yes, only admiration and no fear.

He did not cower back in the face of the Holy Flames. The Holy

Flames made him gasp in admiration, the perfect and strange balance was filled with beauty, and was a masterpiece of the human history. But it was not something that he feared.

There had never been an invincible power in the world, and any power would have its shortcomings and points that could be controlled.

The hollowfied energy was the crux to nourishing Spirit Generals. Tang Tian had never earnestly researched and studied into Spirit Generals, but he had many Spirit Generals by his side, and had his own understanding towards them. In some sense, Spirit Generals were also some sort of hollowfied existences. That was also why Spirit Generals were unable to directly absorb energy to strengthen themselves.

The hollowfied energy needs to stay, while the Emulated Laws within the Holy Flames needs to be removed.

Tang Tian was constantly pondering about what kind of law the Emulated Laws inside the Holy Flames were. Although he witnessed the Emulated Law inside the Holy Flame in that instant when the God Armor and Holy Flame had interacted, but the time that the entire process took was too short, and he did not grasp clearly on what the Law was. But he suddenly understood, it was Radiant Law, it was an emulated Radiant Law! It was impossible for it to be any other Law, and could only be Radiant Law.

Because they were from Temple, and the Great Clan Elder's Holy Flame was developed from the Temple's Holy Flame.

This sudden clarity and enlightenment instantly solved many thoughts that Tang Tian had. He had studied the ordinary Holy Flame before, and had an understanding towards Radiant Laws. Radiant Laws were pure and tyrannical, but Tang Tian's body had gone through countless of Law Temperings before.

His following actions surprised everyone. He threw out a Spirit Card.

It was a Gold Grade Spirit Card, it landed 10m away from Tang Tian and floated in the air, unmoved. Tang Tian's actions were very fast, one after another, gold light shot out from his body. In the blink of the eye, there were spirit cards all around him, all in the same gold color.

One hundred Gold Grade Spirit Cards floated quietly around him, as though an invisible force had tied them together.

Tang Tian heaved a sigh of relief, Luckily, I brought sufficient Gold Grade Spirit Cards, all of which were prepared for him by Pi Pa. With the appearance of many saints and the flourishing Mechanical armies in Heaven's Road, the value of Spirit Cards had plummeted. Ursa Major Constellation had become extremely wealthy, with all sorts of revenues and income, thus they prepared countless of Gold Grade Spirit Cards. Pi Pa was thoughtful, and when Tang Tian had returned the last time, she gave Tang Tian plenty of consumables, one of which was Spirit Cards, and the number of Gold Grade Spirit Cards reached a hundred.

All around Tang Tian, the Gold Grade Spirit Cards flashed with gold lights, like a golden ripple of water. The positions of the spirit cards were carefully planned out by Tang Tian, and not one touched the Holy Flames.

I have to thank Pi Pa when I return, Tang Tian noted inwardly.

He directed Ah Xin and Xiao Ran and the other Spirit Generals to stand beneath the Spirit Cards, then got them to sit cross legged.

They followed Tang Tian's orders and got into position, and everyone else subconsciously calmed down.

The golden figure in the sky that looked like the God of War, opened his arms.

Chapter 928 – Parting

With Temple as the center, twelve Pillars of Punishments were scattered at random distribution in a ring shaped region with a radius of fifteen kilometers.

The Twelve Saint Knight Spirit Generals all arrived before a Pillar of Punishment. The fiery pillars that shot to the sky made them look insignificant, and with one flaming tongue, they would instantly be devoured and not even ashes would be left.

Without hesitation, all of them jumped into the fiery pillars at the same time, and in the blink of the eye, their bodies disappeared within the fiery pillars.

Sophie watched as they jumped into the surging Holy Flames. She sighed, then without hesitation, stepped into the Fiery pillar in front of her. Her body was instantly drowned out by the Holy Flames, she had no clue as to how she would transform, Will I remember Charles? Will I remember everyone?

Maybe it'll be better to not remember anything....

The last light behind her disappeared, and she was placed in a completely golden world. The flowing Holy Flames emitted a divine aura. For some reason, the divine aura felt extremely intimate and warm, and her body had the instinct to want to touch the golden Holy Flames, and had the instinct to leap into the warm embrace. It was as though that deep within her body existed a voice that was constantly telling her to give her all to the warmth. The voice seemed to tell her that all her indecisiveness and loss would find their answers, and all of her grief and disappointment would find redemption.

Sophie's eyes were as clear as water as she observed the golden ocean in front of her. She sighed in her heart.

The past is the past, I have already lost what I've lost, what use is

there for redemption? Only one reason exists for me to continue living.

She leapt into the sea of golden Holy Flames.

In the distance, The Great Clan Elder's gaze was fixated on Sophie. When he saw Sophie's hesitation and doubt, he snorted, and the air around him turned cold.

Only when Sophie jumped into the Fiery Pillar did he turn to leave.

He walked to the empty Temple with steady footsteps, every step he took was heavy, as though he was stepping on the surface of Mars. The lonely echoes did not make him hesitate or feel emotional, the empty Temple that his eyes were on only made him think about the future bustling life.

The new Temple will rule the world, regardless of it being Sacred Saint Galaxy or Heaven's Road, everything will belong to Temple.

An unprecedented powerful Temple will be born from my hands. A grand new era, will be born from my hands.

He firmly believed in it!

The golden flames stopped in front of Charles' tomb.

He stared at the tombstone as grief enveloped the entire cemetery.

"It is a pity, you will not be able to see this grand era."

A sigh sounded out from the flames, it was only at this time, then the Great Clan Elder's voice sounded old and sad. He stood in front of the tomb for a long time, until night descended.

Even in nightfall, the Saint Continent was still as bright as day, the Holy Flames that flowed in the sky emitted a divine golden light that drove away the darkness.

A light sigh came out, the flames slowly parted, and a frail old man walked out from the flames. The indifferent face was

currently with grief. The Great Clan Elder's appearance had always been a secret in Temple, and the last person to have seen the Great Clan Elder's true appearance was a few decades before, back when the Great Clan Elder was still young. When he got into power, he no longer revealed his appearance.

His upper body was gray and translucent, and no one would have ever imagined that the Great Clan Elder that held the strongest authority and power in Temple was actually a Spirit General.

He caressed the tombstone and sighed: "Child, rest well."

With that, he turned and left, the golden Holy Flames once again enveloped his entire body. He headed towards the center of Temple, where the altar was situated. His most loyal companion, his most reliable partner, Clan Elder Ta Fei, stood there, waiting for him.

As usual, his hair was combed to perfection, and his white robes were extremely clean.

The Great Clan Elder looked at his old partner, and after a long while, he suddenly spoke: "You don't have to do this."

"What's that about need or not." Ta Fei chuckled, then bowed: "I don't have many years to live, please let me contribute this last bit of strength."

The Great Clan Elder's voice had a faint mix of emotions: "You can become a Spirit General, although the probability is not high, but at least you still have the chance to do so, we can still fight side by side!"

"Please grant me this selfishness." Ta Fei had a calm expression: "I will never disobey your orders, and regardless of the price, I am always willing to accept it. It is just that the sins and blood on my hands made me lose the courage to continue."

"We are the righteous ones! Ta Fei, are you doubting our work? As long as we destroy all of the obstruction, we will be able to

rebuild Temple! Have you forgotten the oath we swore when we were young? You said you want to fight by my side! Now, you want to leave me? What is the blood worth? What are the sins worth?"

The flames danced fervently, the Great Clan Elder became agitated, and bellowed out.

Ta Fei laughed: "That's why you're the Great Clan Elder, and I am Ta Fei."

The memories of the past flashed before his eyes, Ta Fei felt warmth in his heart, and as per usual, he bowed sincerely: "Please let Ta Fei work for you this one last time."

The Great Clan Elder remained quiet, the flames suddenly stopped, and the atmosphere became stifling.

"Please take care, Ta Fei will be unable to serve you by your side in the future."

Ta Fei revealed a warm smile, Golden Flames gushed out of his body and devoured him silently. From the start till the end, he maintained his smile, without revealing any pain. When the last bit of his soul was devoured by the flames, the golden fiery pillar shot to the sky.

This pillar was much thicker than the other pillars, and the Holy Flames was even stronger.

"You coward! You weakling! You trash....."

The golden flames suddenly danced fervently once more, Great Clan Elder broke out in anger as he scolded and scolded. When he finished, only a whimper could be heard from the flames.

After a long time, only the sound of the flames crackling could be heard.

Inside the flames, a vague figure stood still, watching the thick fiery pillar.

Suddenly, the Great Clan Elder stepped forward to the Fiery

Pillar.

“Ta Fei, I am right! I will definitely rebuild Temple! I will unify the world! Just wait, Ta Fei!”

The figure that stepped into the fiery pillar disappeared without hesitation, and loneliness drifted in the wind.

Snow City, in the air above Mace Field Tradings shop.

The Gold Grade Spirit Cards that floated in the air formed a golden hoop. Above the golden hoop, Tang Tian had his arms wide open, as though he wanted to hug the sky.

The spirit cards beneath his feet emitted dazzling golden light, and the congealed golden light drowned Tang Tian's body. The surrounding air started to change, as the air started to flow around the golden hoop, and formed a faint windscreen around the hoop.

Below, Ah Xin and Xiao Ran raised their heads, they were extremely curious as they had never seen such a technique before.

Suddenly, specks of gold light sprinkled down like gold snow, which made the scenery beautiful. Ah Xin extended his palm out in an attempt to grab onto these specks of light, but these specks of light leaked through his palm and landed onto the ground. These specks of gold light dyed the floor with a layer of gold light.

Gradually, more and more specks of gold light fell. Xiao Ran spoke out: “There's a pattern on the ground.”

Ah Xin immediately lowered his head to look, as expected, the gold light did not sprinkle uniformly on the ground, but form an extremely complicated pattern on the ground. Ah Xin revealed a surprised look, the patterns on the ground was familiar to him, as though he had seen it before. This strange familiarity flashed in his mind, but when he carefully thought about it, he could not remember.

He suppressed the surprise and suspicions in his mind, and right at that moment, Tang Tian's voice came out: "It might be painful in a while, you guys have to tolerate it."

Ah Xin immediately sensed Tang Tian was different from usual, it was still Tang Tian's voice, but it had become indifferent. They had interacted with Tang Tian for a long time, and had some basic understanding with him, and usually, Tang Tian was a rather passionate and lively person.

Ah Xin and Xiao Ran looked at each other, and noticed the suspicion and surprise in each other's eyes. The both of them had discussed about Tang Tian's strength privately before, and they reckoned that even together, they would not be his opponent. The two of them were intelligent people, Tang Tian's different behavior meant that the situation had become more complicated, and Tang Tian's burden was even bigger.

Furthermore, the two of them had witnessed Tang Tian's daily training, the strength that he gave all out caused them to admire and respect him. They had never heard Tang Tian complain of fatigue, and in their hearts, Tang Tian was definitely worthy of being the head.

But when the head had told them that it would be painful and asked them to tolerate, how could their expressions not changed?

Ah Xin swallowed his saliva, he wanted to ask how painful it would be.

Xiao Ran behaved more straightforwardly. She simply grabbed onto her own Zanbato tightly.

The speed of the wind screen became faster and faster, it was like a giant vortex that produced a gigantic suction force, pulling all the Holy Flames around towards them. The gold sprinkled pattern beneath their feet exploded with light, and they felt as if they were situated inside a golden vortex.

By the side, Magatama who had maintained silence the entire time suddenly raised her head to look, her face was one of shock, as though she was looking at some terrifying thing.

Ah Xin finally remembered, and knew what the familiar pattern was. In the past, there were many energy rooms in the camp. He had not understood what the energy room was to be used for, but he already knew that the situation was strange, he immediately shouted: “Hey hey hey, I am just a staff officer, staff officer, I’m an office worker who gives advice, an office worker doesn’t go up the front lines....”

He wailed out loud, but his voice was drowned out by the surrounding noises.

The Holy Flames were pulled into the golden hoop formed by the Gold Grade Spirit Cards, and suddenly became lively, the Holy Flames’ rate of pulse increased. In this region, there was something that had attracted them.

Every Spirit Card emitted the aura of a Spirit General. Spirit Generals and Holy Flames were two uniquely mixed products, thus the two were extremely compatible. That was why the Great Clan Elder had placed his hopes on Spirit Generals, as the Holy Flames would merge with the Spirit Generals without restraint.

The Spirit Generals from Temple could absorb the Holy Flames much more easily, as they were much more compatible, and could effortlessly absorb them. The Spirit Generals from Temple were all formed from the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights, who had spent a decade of their lives training in the Holy Flame, thus the Holy Flames had become a part of them. After their transformation into Spirit Generals, this capability was preserved.

But Ah Xin and the rest were different, the only useful thing for Ah Xin and the rest were the hollowfied energy. As for the Emulated Laws inside the Holy Flame, it was poison to them. If they had forcefully absorbed the Holy Flames, most probably, they

would become Spirit Generals for Temple.

But Tang Tian already found a way.

Chapter 929 – Pressure, Idea, Hole

The composition of the Holy Flames was extremely stable, the Emulated Laws and Hollowfied Energy had reached a miraculous equilibrium. This equilibrium was extremely stable, and both factors influenced each other greatly. It could be said that it was almost impossible to draw out the Emulated Laws directly from the Holy Flame.

Even Tang Tian could not do it. As he had the God Armor, he could control Law Threads, but yet he was helpless against the Emulated Law Threads. Before seeing the Holy Flames, Tang Tian had never seen the Emulated Laws or the Hollowfied Energy before.

Tang Tian thought of another way.

Since he could not separate the two, he would destroy their equilibrium. He would use laws to break into the Hollowfied Energy and use the Laws to collide with the Emulated Laws. The collision of both factors would lead to their destruction, and Tang Tian would be able to obtain the pure Hollowfied Energy.

The most valuable thing of the Holy Flame was its thought process and creativity, and not its technique with laws and energy.

Breaking it was far easier than constructing it.

Of course, maybe it was not that easy, but ultimately it was a possible method, and the only method that Tang Tian was able to think of in the short span of time. As for the risks, Tang Tian did not have the time to care about it.

Holy Flames was being pulled in from all directions, the Spirit General auras from the gold grade spirit cards had attracted them. The aura of the gold grade spirit cards were extremely alluring to them.

Tang Tian focused on controlling the tempo, when the number of

Holy Flames that entered reach a hundred, the wind screen would isolate the aura. The surging Holy Flames would lose its targets, and their speed would plummet drastically, and resemble jellyfishes floating outside of the wind screen.

Inside the windscreen, the hundred Holy Flames were spread out, where each Holy Flame floated above one gold grade Spirit Card. The gold light from the spirit cards enveloped the Holy Flames, as the unique aura of the spirit generals caused the Holy Flames to remain stationary, their pulses became much slower while being attracted to the aura of the Spirit cards.

Tang Tian watched them, everything that had happened was still in his control.

But the true test had yet to begun.

With his opened arms, Tang Tian carefully experienced the Law Threads swimming away in the air. Suddenly, a cold gleam flashed in his eyes, his ten fingers bent and grabbed onto an empty space, and a flickering rainbow light suddenly appeared in his hand.

From this, one could see Tang Tian's improvements. In the past, he could only use his Godfist to gather Law Threads. But at that moment, he was able to use various hand techniques to grab onto Law Threads in the air, which was a comprehensive improvement.

Under the state of the God Armor, Tang Tian's degree of sensitivity towards Laws had reached an unimaginable level, and from this point, Tang Tian's self created Awakened God Armor was in no way inferior to the Holy Flames.

Tang Tian's God Armor was not only used for battle, to him, the high sensitivity towards Laws and delicate control capabilities' use was amplified in training and not in battle.

With his high sensitivity towards Laws and his strong control capabilities, he was able to utilize various methods to do things, and that was the most powerful point of the Awakened God

Armor. The various different methods were related to the various different laws, which greatly aided in his understanding to Laws. This advantage was something that Du Ke, with his Law Domain, was incapable of doing. If Du Ke knew of the miraculous use of the Awakened God Armor, he would instantly be salivating.

The traits of the Awakened God Armor was not of much use for Tang Tian to understand some of the Laws, but held superiority in helping him in terms of understanding the relation between the laws, understanding the origins of the laws,

If there was a day that Tang Tian was able to understand the essence of laws, he could create his own laws, and that was a domain that the human race had never achieved.

Alright, Tang Tian was still a few million kilos away from that, and it is a far-fetched goal. But what he could currently use was his ordinary appreciation to understand the laws.

At the boundary between life or death, a human would unleash all of his potential, and it was in such a time where it was the easiest for the person to break through. Although it was extremely dangerous for it to occur in battle, but it was a widely acknowledged theory. But the flash between life and death was built from the continuous perseverance and bitter training. Without this deep accumulation from the ordinary times, it would be a fool's dream to wish to gain a flash of understanding in the life or death moment.

Tang Tian grabbed onto the Law Threads, and immediately gained the attention of the Holy Flames, which initially were floating above the Gold grade Spirit Cards, all of them jumped up eagerly.

Suddenly, the gold grade spirit cards erupted with a gold light that froze the jumping Holy Flames.

The Law Thread in Tang Tian's hand dimmed down, as a layer of energy formed around the Law Thread. Tang Tian's hands

trembled, the Law Thread that was enveloped by energy had become extremely straight like a sharp arrow, and he pierced it into the Holy Flame.

Chi chi chi.

The energy around the Law Thread quickly melted, as the hollowfied energy and energy were also mortal enemies. Right before the energy was completely melted, the Law Thread touched onto the dotted figure inside the Holy Flame.

The Holy Flame turned sluggish, the Emulated Law Thread appeared and stabbed into the core of the Law Thread.

There were no sounds, the instant the Emulated Law pierced onto the Law Thread, they instantly disappeared, and the Holy Flame looked like a worm being distorted, or a candle being burnt, as it gradually flowed apart. In the blink of the eye, the Holy Flame that flowed apart transformed into a transparent light speck. This was the hollowfied Energy's true form, without any Emulated Radiant Law, the pure hollowfied energy was transparent and colorless.

Every speck of light was a perfect sphere, like transparent balls.

They penetrated through the golden layer of light released by the Spirit Generals like rain pouring down from the sky. The specks of light landed on the Spirit Generals, and immediately permeated into their bodies, causing their consciousness to be roused. Ah Xin and Xiao Ran were in joy, they were able to feel their bodies being strengthened. Not needing his orders, all the Spirit Generals got busy as they took in the hollowfied energy. But there were too many Hollowfied Energy, and although they managed to take in a substantial amount, but even more dropped onto the ground.

Ah Xin was puzzled, There's nothing pain about this, there's nothing to tolerate. Why did he say that.

Following the success, Tang Tian's confidence grew. His

movements became more familiarized as the amount of Holy Flames increased. This also affected the amount of Hollowfied Energy, as the amount of Hollowfied Energy became more and more, and Ah Xin and the other Spirit Generals felt as though they were in a pouring rain.

Ah Xin opened his mouth, his face revealing an expression of enjoyment, It's too awesome, he felt as though his entire past ten thousand years were worth it. But he still maintained some clarity, he did not forget Tang Tian's reminder. Could our In-Law be reminding us to tolerate from overeating? Oh my, it is truly hard to tolerate this, hahah!

At the other side, Xiao Ran also felt extremely comfortable, but when she caught sight of Ah Xin's wretched expression, she felt the urge to raise her leg and kick him far away. But after considering that they were still in danger, she suppressed the urge and focused on absorbing the Hollowfied Energy.

Ah Xin did not notice it, but the familiar engravings on the ground that resembled the vein lines of the Energy rooms were releasing faint light. The raindrops of Hollowfied energy touched the ground, it would instantly assimilate into the pattern. The Hollowfied Energy that dropped into the ground would surge into the wind screen.

The hollowfied energy that had been sucked into the ground was slowly transferred into the wind screen, causing it to have subtle changes, and the originally thin wind screen had formed to what seemed like a water screen.

But due to the downpour inside the windscreen, no one noticed the changes of it. With the addition of the Hollowfied Energy, the wind screen started to attract more Holy Flame, and even more Holy Flames started to surge towards them. Ah Xin and the rest intuitively felt that if what they were experiencing before was a storm, then they were now under the attack of a waterfall.

This feeling is too great!

Oh my oh my, it is truly too painful, I'm so full to the point that it is so painful, this feels too good to the point that it is painful! Hahahaha!

Ah Xin felt that he was about to fly sky high, he was in a state of trance, something that he had never experienced before.

Chi, a faint sound of air being cut through came out, but due to the falling rain, it was undetected.

Ah Xin's body suddenly froze, a sensation of pain had appeared on his thighs, and spread throughout his entire body, he was startled for a few seconds, before finally reacting and releasing a heart wrenching pain.

Xiao Ran's reaction was faster than Ah Xin, almost at the same time, she used the large Zanbato to protect her front. But the following scene shocked her, the sword auras actually cut through her blade and struck onto her body, instantly numbing her.

Countless sword auras formed by the Hollowfied Energy shot out from the wind screen.

Chi Chi Chi!

Almost all of the spirit generals were struck, all of the sword auras formed by the Hollowfied Energy had become extremely cold and sharp, and every Spirit General felt as if they were being sliced apart.

No matter what Ah Xin was thinking at that point of time, he would had never expected that it was only the beginning.

The number of sword auras grew, they became even more than the rain, and being spurred by the wind screen, they flew around at high velocity revolutions, their sharp shrieks had become low pitched, the sounds of these sword auras was heart palpitating, causing people who heard it to feel their scalps go numb. The fast revolving sword auras were like clusters of capstans with their

handles replaced with swords. The sharp sword concepts shot from all directions, and Xiao Ran felt as though she was being grinded up. She felt that her body was being sliced into pieces, the pain bore into her heart, but before she could faint, the endless Hollowfied Energy would replenish and restore her body.

This repetition had no end.

Ah Xin's numb mind only had one thought, That asshole, what he said was real.....

If either Crane or Ling Xu were present, they would have instantly recognized what was happening, it was the Sword Tempest Cyclone! It was the Sword Tempest Cyclone that Tang Tian had used in the past to scare everyone to death! In Ursa Major Constellation, Tang Tian had completed the Sword Tempest Cyclone and won the praises from everyone. Of course, what everyone enjoyed most from it was Tang Tian's wails and screams that lasted for several months. Those intense screams were even able to make listeners shed tears.

Children, see how for the sake of success, His Majesty was willing to pay such a huge price, so what qualifications do you all have to complain of pain and fatigue? Did all of you suffer as much as His Majesty? Did all of you undergo pain as painful as His Majesty? Do you know why our Ursa Major Constellation armies are invincible? Because in that year, all of His Majesty's subordinates had specially stood outside the storm listening to His Majesty screaming in pain to the point that they all shed tears, and from then on, they all worked energetically for prosperity, and became His Majesty's invincible elites.

This was the most used speech that the Ursa Major Constellation citizens used to encourage their children. If Tang Tian knew about it, he would be the one crying, since when did his troops work energetically for prosperity by listening to him scream? They were all clearly rejoicing in his pain, every day, they would run over to hear him scream, that was definitely for the sake of their own

happiness!

But if Ah Xin knew about these, he would have crawled out of the wind screen, by hook or by crook.

Sadly, he did not know.

The Sword Tempest Cyclone was an idea that suddenly came to Tang Tian, because when he felt that there were too many Holy Flames, he thought about how to better use them? At that time, he instantly thought of the Sword Tempest Cyclone, the original name of the Sword Tempest Cyclone was Whirlpool Sword Spirit Tempering Technique, and it was most suited for Ah Xin, Xiao Ran, and the rest.

Boom boom boom!

Compared to Tang Tian's old Sword Tempest Cyclone, the Sword Tempest Cyclone formed by the Hollowfied Energy was even more powerful. At that time, what Tang Tian used was the energy of the constellation, which was simply incomparable to the Saint Galaxy's energy concentration. Furthermore, the Hollowfied Energy was much stronger than ordinary energy.

The stronger the Sword Tempest Cyclone, the more intense the pain, the more painful the screams.

The gloomy and sharp shrieks were unable to conceal the heart wrenching screams and wails inside, causing Ji Ze and the rest to be so afraid that their faces turned pale white. Back when Tang Tian had reminded Ah Xin and the rest, Ji Ze and the God Armor Army were rejoicing in their calamity. They knew the standard of the Master's so called pain, and how scary it was.

Tolerate it, those words from the Masters were extremely terrifying words.

When they heard the screams from the inside, they all revealed expressions as though they had expected it. But as the screams and wails got more intense and brutal, their hearts started beating

faster and the colors on their faces receded, What's going on inside? What is Master actually doing to them? Why are they in so much pain?

Qian Hui had a look as though she could not tolerate the screams, her eyes fixed on the windscreen and vortex within.

She knew that Tang Tian definitely had some unique method, but hearing them scream inside, she could not help but pray for them, All of you must hold on.

What shocked everyone even more was that the wind screen and vortex was constantly swelling, the endless stream of Holy Flames continued to surge in from all directions. As the wind screen and vortex grew bigger, the sound of the sword auras became more distinct.

Swords?

Everyone were skeptical and were confused, only Sima Xiao knew what was going on, his eyes suddenly lit up and he blurted out: "That's the Sword Tempest Cyclone!"

In the past, he had viewed Tang Tian as a worthy adversary, and he knew everything that had occurred in Ursa Major Constellation. He had even specially investigated on the Sword Tempest Cyclone. When he first saw the Wind Screen, he did not link them together, but when he heard the sword shrieks clearer, he started to wonder where he had seen such a thing before.

"Sword Tempest Cyclone?" Qian Hui turned her head and asked.

"Yes, that is the Sword Tempest Cyclone." Sima Xiao explained: "It comes from the Whirlpool Sword Spirit Tempering Technique, it is a technique that uses sword concepts to temper the martial spirit. It showed off its might in Tang Tian's hands, the Whirlpool Sword became the Sword Tempest Cyclone, and when Tang Tian was in Ursa Major Constellation, he frequently used it to train, and at the end, he even used it to kill Saints."

When Qian Hui heard that Tang Tian had used the same method to train, her heart trembled.

“Very few people would use the Whirlpool Sword Spirit Tempering Technique to temper themselves, because the one using it must be able to bear the immense pain, and thus it was hailed as the most cruel way of tempering the spirit. No one knew that Tang Tian would actually produce an even more terrifying Sword Tempest Cyclone, and the pain from it is simply unimaginable, and it is hailed as pain that surpass the human’s limit. Tang Tian’s achievement in this is something everyone respects.”

Sima Xiao’s tone of speech was filled with emotions and respect, the longer one interacted with Tang Tian, the harder it was to have a hostile view towards him.

The Godlike Young Lad, behind this name was an unimaginable amount of blood, sweat and tears, and the pain and loneliness that he had tolerated. Such a person was someone no one could feel envious of.

Although Qian Hui knew of the bitterness Tang Tian had suffered in the past, but to hear Sima Xiao speak about him, she still felt the pain in her heart.

~Alright, Big Brother Tian had suffered through it before, all of you have to enjoy it well...oh, I mean, to do your best!”

Qian Hui immediately overlooked them screaming, her gaze was beyond them, the faint gold figure above the storm had captured her attention.

Tang Tian did not know the situation outside, and as for the screams beneath him, he remained emotionless to them. ~In the past, when I was inside dying and screaming, all of those assholes actually sat outside and enjoyed listening to me. Hehe, now it is your turn.....~

Alright, in truth, Tang Tian was too busy that he did not have the

time to even care about them.

Even with the assistance of the Awakened God armor, it was not an easy thing to manage. The number of Holy Flames were too much, to the point that it scared the rest. He was extremely curious on how many Spirit Generals the Great Clan Elder had prepared. How many Spirit Generals does he have to be able to absorb so many Holy Flames?

This question flashed past his mind for a second before disappearing. The pressure he had to bear far surpassed his expectations.

He had overlooked an important detail, once the Sword Tempest Cyclone had formed, it itself had a self strengthening ability, and did not need his control. But the situation was as such, as the Sword Tempest Cyclone continued to grow and strengthen, its attractiveness also grew even more.

The speed of the Holy Flames surging towards them grew faster and faster, Tang Tian needed to handle the Holy Flames to be able to obtain the Hollowfied Energy. But if he was unable to convert them, and the Holy Flame were to mix into the Sword Tempest Cyclone and transform into Sword Auras, they would become fatal to Ah Xin, Xiao Ran, and the rest.

Tang Tian placed all of his attention on handling the Holy Flames.

His frequency was much stronger than when he just started, as the number of Holy Flames also gave him ample experience. He was already about to handle 500 wicks of Holy Flames at one time without any leakage. But as the speed of the Holy Flames continued to increase, it did not make him happy, but instead increased the pressure on him.

He felt more and more taxed, and knew that his rate of improvement could not keep up with the rate of the Sword Tempest Cyclone's growth.

This can't go on!

In the state of the Awakened God Armor, Tang Tian had an astonishing sharp mind for calculation. He remained calm as he counted, According to the growth rate of the two, It only requires ten minutes before I will be drowned out by the surging Holy Flames, at that point, the first leak will appear.

I need to do something, Tang Tian was extremely clear that he needed to make a change.

The immense pressure caused Tang Tian to feel choked, as though he was under the pressure of Mt. Tai, even in the state of the Awakened God Armor. His hands did not slow down at all while his brain worked quickly, What do I do?

Decrease the speed of the Sword Tempest Cyclone?

This idea was the first to be rejected by Tang Tian, the current size of the Sword Tempest Cyclone was already extremely huge. It's height was already rising to a 120m, while its diameter was at 50m, which was the size of a hill. Such a humongous object contained an extremely terrifying power, and it was not something that he alone could withstand.

Then I can only increase the rate at which I handle the Holy Flames, but, How can I increase it?

I need more Law Threads, only with more Law Threads can my rate increase. It was not difficult to increase the number of Law Threads, as long as Tang Tian lessened his pressure on the God Armor, he could control even more Law Threads. But the more the number of Law Threads, the higher the requirement for control, and he was unable to control so many Law Threads.

Seems like it is not only the number of Law Threads, I also have to control the stream of Holy Flames that reaches me.

Tang Tian did not give up, he continued to ponder, he carefully recalled back when he was controlling the Holy Flames. What was

the most difficult part of handling them? Which procedure is delaying me?

Very quickly, his eyes lit up.

Holy Flames viewed Laws as an enemy, he was required to envelop every Law Thread with a layer of energy, and the thickness of the energy had to be constant, to protect the Law Thread to pierce through the outer layer of the Holy Flame, and not obstruct the Emulated Law in the core of the Holy Flame from touching the Law Thread to allow the destruction of both.

It was the most effort consuming part, and yet it was absolutely needed.

How can I lessen the effort for this?

Tang Tian immediately realized that he had grasped the crux of the problem.

Suddenly, Tang Tian's heart moved, If the sword aura formed by the hollowfied energy attacks the Holy Flame, what will happen?

Without hesitation, he immediately led a Hollowfied Energy Sword Aura from the wind screen onto a wick of Holy Flames. The instant the sword aura touched the Holy Flame, a 'bang' sound was produced, the explosion caused the energy to burst into countless beads, just like the raindrops formed after the destruction of both Law threads.

Tang Tian was surprised, but he quickly thought about it.

When the sword aura interacted with the Holy flame's hollowfied energy, both shattered at the same time, but the Emulated Law in the core of the Holy Flame remained intact. But without any protection from the Hollowfied Energy, it floated in the air completely naked. It was a strand of gray mist that was even finer than hair, and emitted a cryptic aura.

The shattered Hollowfied energy gradually floated towards the Emulated Law inside the core.

Tang Tian did not stop it, but carefully observed the entire process.

The hollowfied energy that floated in the air gradually converged back to the Emulated Law inside the core, in the next moment a wick of Holy Flames appeared before Tang Tian once again. The new Holy Flame was much dimmer than it used to be, and the flames had become smaller.

Tang Tian gained some understanding from it, by leading the sword aura to strike on the Holy Flame, the entire process played out once again in front of him. Tang Tian repeated the procedure multiple times, and watched extremely carefully through every process, and finally understood the situation.

The Sword Aura was formed from Hollowfied Energy, and as both the sword aura and the Holy Flame contained the same energy attributes, they did not induce a mutual destruction upon collision. Instead, the Sword Aura power led to the destruction of the composition of the Holy Flame, and thus the Hollowfied Energy and the Emulated Law in the core were separated.

If there were no external force, the Emulated Law in the core would instantly be attracted to the Hollowfied Energy, and once again form together to become a Holy Flame.

But what if there was an external force?

Tang Tian tried it once again, and like before, the Emulated Law inside the Core floated naked in the air again, but this time, Tang Tian used a Law Thread and struck the core.

Silently, both of the Law Threads were destroyed.

As expected, Tang Tian's eyes lit up, he had found the solution.

He only needed to lead the sword auras from the wind screen, by relying on these sword auras to destroy the Holy Flames' composition, he could control the Law Threads much more easily to destroy the Emulated Laws. The Hollowfied Energy inside the

windscreen was endless, that meant the number of Sword Auras were endless as well. Since that was the case, the amount of Holy Flames he could handle at once had increased by a huge amount.

But.....

If that was truly the case, it meant that he too, needed to face the sword auras, the astonishingly large amounts of sword auras.

Am I supposed to experience the Sword Tempest Cyclone again?

After the last experience, even though it was a long time ago, even though he was in the Awakened God Armor, Tang Tian's body trembled. He was just enjoying in Ah Xin and the others' pain, but in the blink of the eye, he had fallen into the pit as well.

Tang Tian instantly had the impulse of crying.

There was nothing more cruel than this to Tang Tian.

Chapter 930 – Too Foolish

Tang Tian had experienced countless of bitter and painful training, from the earliest million times of fundamental martial techniques to the grinding of Fire Scythe Ghost Claw etc, regardless of what training it was, none of them were easy. But the one that had left the largest impact and shadow in his heart, the one that he never wished to go through a second time, was the Sword Tempest Cyclone.

He had to admit that the Sword Tempest Cyclone's training was extremely effective, but even so, he definitely never wanted to experience it again. He did not even have the courage to reminisce about the experience, and he himself did not even understand how he endured through the phase. He was not sure if he could endure it a second time. This mental state was rarely seen from him, and one had to know he was definitely not a coward.

But what he had never expected was that he actually had to go through the Sword Tempest Cyclone once again. Furthermore, it was far stronger than before, and was not something that one could simply endure through. He needed to maintain an extremely high focus on controlling the Law Threads while attacking the naked Emulated Laws that were inside the cores.

Because of it, even in his Awakened God Armor state, his indifferent state of mind could not even suppress the bitter laugh.

I have no other choice.....

Time slowed to a crawl, Tang Tian was clearly able to feel the increase in pressure, and knew that he could no longer delay it.

Tang Tian took a deep breath, his eyes regained its calmness, with an additional smear of determination. Since I can't avoid it, then bring it on. Tang Tian swung his arms wide open again, causing the wind screen all around to erupt, and countless of sword auras exploded out like rain.

Bang!

Intense pain shot from various parts of his body, Tang Tian felt as though he was being pounced on by a pack of wolves, causing him to even have difficulty breathing, his mind went numb, and he was momentarily blank.

But he knew that he could not afford to make any mistakes, and at that moment, he bit his own tongue. The sweet and thick taste of blood pervaded his senses, he was jolted awake. He knew that it was not the time for him to be in a daze.

It was just a moment, but a great number of Holy Flames were instantly shattered, and the Emulated Laws inside their cores were revealed.

Enduring the intense pain and numbness, Tang Tian controlled the laws from both of his hands, and shot them out like spears, striking the Emulated Laws inside the cores that was floating within the sword auras.

Countless of Laws and Emulated Laws and their cores were destroyed simultaneously.

Tang Tian did not know how many sword auras he had used, or how many Holy Flames he had destroyed. He simply used all of his strength to destroy all the Emulated Laws that appeared in his vision like a maniac.

The pain he felt throughout his entire body was extremely clear, and was different from the pain he experienced the first time. This pain was laced with an extremely cold intent. This cold intent was not dense, but extremely penetrative. Tang Tian felt as though his entire body was freezing, but he knew that the cold had directly penetrated into his soul, his flesh and veins were all perfectly fine without any signs of freezing.

He did not know if he had experienced it before, although the pain was intense, but it was not as terrifying as he had expected.

After immersing in it for a while, he felt as if he had gradually got used to the intensity of the pain, with the only exception that his soul felt as though it was freezing, causing him slight pain.

And he even had strength to consider the reason.

Could it be due to the Hollowfied Energy? The Sword Auras were formed from the Hollowfied Energy, and naturally will take on the characteristics of the energy, thus this cold sensation is because of the Hollowfied Energy?

Tang Tian's mind moved, in the last Sword Tempest Cyclone, it tempered his martial spirit, What will this Sword Tempest Cyclone temper with this time?

In truth, Tang Tian himself could not understand the chaos in his body. He was suddenly curious and eager to find out, his body was already refined to its maximum, but his spirit was something he always had a problem with. Because of Little Fool's existence, there was a large difference between him and ordinary people.

That old man better hope I don't find anyone else in me!

I have never heard of a father who would do something to his son's soul!, What made him unable to accept it was the fact that his father actually elected Little Fool as the main soul!

That asshole!

We will settle that debt sooner or later!

I will find an opportunity to beat Little Fool up. Who cares, I can beat him up anytime. As long as I am unhappy, I can beat him up.

Tang Tian completely forgot how biased he was, but very quickly, wails erupted from his own mouth. He felt that he had a crow's mouth, Why did I think that it was not painful at all? Am I retarded?

Sssssi, he suddenly inhaled in cold air, his expression froze as his face turned white.

That sword almost stabbed my.....oh my god....ssssiiii.....asshole, I almost allowed one through.....oh my god, ahhhhhhh!

He screamed miserably, he screamed without control, the pain on his body, no, it was pain directly from his soul. His mind suddenly recalled the scene of Clan Elder Seuss struggling in the Holy Flame, and the part where his soul was struggling, although it was silent, but anyone who witnessed the scene all felt the terrifying pain.

And now, he was personally experiencing it!

He felt as though his soul was being pulled apart, and was trembling incessantly.

But at that moment, he could no longer stop it, despite the pain in his soul, he could not stop it. If he did not handle the Holy Flames and allow them to pass through and transform into sword auras, it would destroy Ah Xin and the rest.

Tang Tian fervently used the Law Threads to attack the Emulated Laws that were inside their cores, and only by doing it fervently could he maintain his focus. He felt that his mind was going numb, the spirit in his eyes was dimming slowly, but his movements never slowed down.

He was like a killing machine that continued to slice without knowing fatigue.

The Sword Tempest Cyclone was like an overwhelming balloon, and was continuously getting larger at an alarming rate. The number of sword auras were also increasing exponentially, and the pain also increased in direct proportion to the number of sword auras. The number of Holy Flames that surged towards them increased as well, and the number of Emulated Laws that Tang Tian had to destroy was also increasing, thus the amount of Hollowfied Energy also increased.

Previously, they felt as though they were under a waterfall of Hollowfied Energy, but now, Ah Xin and the rest already felt as though they were swimming in an ocean, no, not swimming, drowning.

Ah Xin felt like a balloon, the Hollowfied Energy was forcing its way into his body from various positions. That's right, they were forcing their way into his body. At the start, they were required to absorb them independently, but now, they no longer wished to absorb them, but the vast amount of Hollowfied Energy were forcing their way into their bodies.

He felt extremely foolish, previously, he was still cracking a joke about feeling pain! He wanted to cry, he wanted to cry for being too foolish.

He was truly feeling the pain from the sword auras that seemed to be bent on cutting him apart, the pain made him feel as though he could explode at any moment, the pain was so unbearable that he was on the verge of fainting. He wished so badly that he could faint, but he did not have the chance.

The Hollowfied Energy was like saltwater intrusion, doing their best to barge into his body. They were fine like needles, poking and piercing his entire body, causing him to feel the pain from the Hollowfied Energy as well as the sword auras. His entire body was swollen in pain, and the only thing that consoled him was that the pain was well distributed.....

According to logic, the intense pain should have caused Ah Xin to lose consciousness long ago. But with the endless stream of Hollowfied Energy, they restored his body endlessly, causing the cuts to heal the moment they appeared. The endless repetition of being cut and healed looped over and over again with no end.

The only thing Ah Xin could do was to scream in pain, he could not even control his own screams.....~How did I ever fall to such a pitiful state.~

Thus, he screamed with even more sorrow.

The intense pain caused him to grab whatever he could grab, and unknowingly, he had grabbed onto Undying Sword, both of his hands were holding onto the sword hilt tightly.

He did not even notice that Undying Sword was like a dry sand dune greedily devouring the Hollowfied Energy.

Old Tang and the Old Commander buried Mu Zhi Xia solemnly, of course, there were no religious ceremony held on the battlefield. The most they could do was place a wooden plank, which had the words “Here lies Mu Zhi Xia” written on it.

Old Tang suddenly trembled in surprise: “Eh, why does it feel cold?”

The Old commander glanced at him: “If you didn’t do anything wrong, you don’t have to be afraid.”

Old Tang immediately blurted out: “I forgot you’re a ghost.”

The Old Commander remained unmoved: “You’re not even worthy to be a ghost.”

“Childish!”

“Idiot!”

The two men snorted in unison, the two of them were used to the pointless struggles.

“It was a pity for Mu Zhi Xia.” The Old Commander suddenly spoke out: “The entire army was a pity, they were all good soldiers.”

His gaze landed on the soldiers that were kneeling in front of Mu Zhi Xia’s tombstone, and could not resist but sigh. He was an old generation General, and had special feelings towards soldiers, and hated such a sight. All of the soldiers no longer had the vigor and aura of an army that was hailed as Number One Beneath the

Heavens. All of them looked lifeless with sunken eyes, as though they were walking corpses.

Old Tang sighed: “Just watch, Temple is too evil and did too many unkind actions, they are digging their own grave, and no one can save them. The Gods will destroy those they deem crazy. With Temple’s lunacy, it is about time for them to be destroyed.”

“We can’t get through Wei Ye Guan Continent.” The Old Commander spoke honestly.

Old Tang turned his head and asked unhappily: “Is there no other way?”

“What we can do now is to force a siege, but the casualties will be extremely high.” The Old Commander said somewhat helplessly: “At such a crucial juncture, the one defending the place is the defense expert Jia Ya, we don’t have a chance. I can bring them to take some risks, but I can’t bring them to send them to their deaths.:

Old Tang kept quiet, he knew what the Old Commander was talking about, otherwise, the Large Savage Continent Army would not had been stuck and unable to move for such a long time. But when he heard the answer, he was still filled with disappointment. He initially harbored some hope in his heart, thinking that with the Old Commander’s high standard, he might have a solution.

The Old Commander did not know what to say, consoling people had never been his forte. They were in a situation where they were helpless and no strategy could reverse the situation. All of the Military Generals were most afraid of such a situation.

Right at that moment, one of the soldiers that had finished paying his respect to Mu Zhi Xia walked over.

All of the bodyguards around Old Tang and the Old Commander stopped him, but the Old Commander waved for him to pass through.

“Master, we have a way to enter Wei Ye Guan Continent.” The soldier who was shabby, had a wasted appearance with sunken eye sockets spoke out, the only striking thing was that his pair of eyes revealed a deep rooted hatred.

The two men were startled, as they subconsciously looked at each other and noticed the ecstasy in each other’s eyes.

Chapter 931 – Du Ke's Fury

After studying the Holy Flame for a long time, Du Ke had more or less understood the situation, and his heart was only filled with admiration.

On Law Domains, he was the true grandmaster, and there were very few people that could garner his respect.

The first was Tang Tian.

Tang Tian's strength was not laid in his profound understanding towards Law, but his ability to destroy and his disdain on all Laws. Tang Tian did not care how a certain Law was used, he would use the most barbaric and unreasonable method to grab all the Laws to use. In terms of Law Domains, Tang Tian was like a tyrant, his Awakened God Armor the cage for laws.

The creator of the Holy Flame walked a different path, the transformation of Laws and Energy in his hands caused others to be in awe. He was like a warlock of Law Domain, he pulled Laws and Energy into the shadows, and transformed them into his own, and with his own hands, he reached the apex. The Emulated Laws, the Hollowfied Energy had formed a miraculous equilibrium like magic, and emitted an indescribable sense of beauty.

Du Ke sighed again and again, compared to Tang Tian's unreasonable and barbaric strength, the Holy Flame contained a beautiful and delicate equilibrium that he obviously adored and admired more. The Beauty of the Holy Flame was a result of thousands of experiments, one could imagine how much effort the creator had put into it.

He then realized that he had underestimated Temple, and the depths of Temple truly made one to revere them.

But in the end, he was still a man who had gained enlightenment on the Law Domain, and after gaining clarity on the principles, he

was able to counter it. With the power of the Law Domain, he stood on the grounds of being invincible. In his Law Domain, he was the God.

The Holy Flame was a form in a state between Laws and Energy, but ultimately, it had not left the profound theories of Laws and Energy.

A layer of blood red flame surged around his body, but as time passed, the blood flame gradually dimmed down, turning into a faint red, until it became close to colorless. The flame became colorless, and blazed so thin to the point that it could burn out at any moment, and did not release any warmth. This was the flame that Du Ke had grasped from the Holy Flame, although its equilibrium was not as miraculous as the Holy Flame, but in essence, the two had no difference.

It too, wielded an Emulated Law inside its core and had Hollowfied Energy.

Du Ke was not pleased, compared to the gold Holy Flames, this ethereal flame that he had imitated was much more crude. Alright, this is the best I can make do with for now, when the battle is over, I can slowly study and research on it.

With his body covered with the transparent Flames, Du Ke rushed into the sea of Golden Holy Flames.

The golden Holy Flames were blocked by the transparent flames around him. His assumption was accurate, he did not feel any pressure from the Holy Flames. Although the Ethereal Flames around him did not merge with the Holy Flames, they had a similar aura, which prevented the Holy Flames from attacking Du Ke. The Holy Flames viewed the Ethereal Flames around Du Ke as a similar species.

Du Ke's idea could not be considered ingenious, but it was simple and direct, and one could tell the crux of it just by looking at it. The creator of Holy Flames obviously did not forget the existence

of the Sin Domain, and the Holy Flame's target was both energy and laws, but the creator would have never expected that there would actually be someone who was able to unravel the secrets of the Holy Flame so quickly, and even found its loophole.

Du Ke flew forward unhindered by the Holy Flames, which stretched out to as far as he could see.

As he flew on and on, the leisurely look on Du Ke's face disappeared, replaced with seriousness. Initially, he had thought that Temple had used the Holy Flames to seal the estuaries, but he quickly realized that the amount of Holy Flames was more than he had imagined. When he rushed into the Holy Flames of the Estuary and saw the fiery pillars that extended into the sky, his face changed.

He had never expected that such a majestic scene would appear in the Saint Continent, Temple's skill is truly surprising.

The further he flew, the more he felt that something was wrong, no one from Temple had come to question him, instead, the city had turned into a ghost town, and there was nobody. All around, he could see the broken walls and pillars melting due to the high temperature. There were a huge number of Holy Flames floating in the sky, all of which resemble dandelions filling the sky.

What exactly happened here in Saint Continent?

Du Ke's heart was filled with shock, Did a massacre happen here?

He raised his head and looked at the fiery pillars and the flow of Holy Flames in the sky, then at the dandelions floating all around him. His gaze landed on the numerous floating Holy Flames, they were not big, majority were the size of fingers and the largest did not exceed the size of a fist. But there were an endless amount of them like the sand in the desert, and was uncountable.

Du Ke stared at the Holy Flames in a daze, All of these Holy Flames are so small, which means the level of the martial artists

are very low, but for there to be so many....

Suddenly, a terrifying thought flashed past his mind, It cannot be....

Du Ke felt a cold chill shot up from the sole of his feet to the top of his head, and all the hair on his body stood as he trembled involuntarily. After returning to the Sacred Saint Galaxy, he always thought that the citizens of Sacred Saint Galaxy lived a safe and fortunate life, and felt that the citizens of the Sin Domain lived in an extremely harsh and brutal environment. But the scene before him shattered this impression.

This is too.....too cruel!

He had seen all sorts of cruelty in the Sin Domain, but not one was comparable to the scene before him, which made him feel fear. He was unable to comprehend, what kind of lunatic would be able to do such a sick and disgusting thing?

After the shock and fear, his expression became serious.

If I continue to underestimate and disregard this lunatic enemy, I will most probably be digging my own grave.

Du Ke hastened his speed, looking for signs of Tang Tian all over. He firmly believed that Tang Tian would not be so easily defeated, although the Holy Flames were outstanding, but Tang Tian was definitely not a weak martial artist. Du Ke had never seen such a powerful martial artist like Tang Tian. Furthermore, Tang Tian was a natural genius when it came to battle, he had the instincts of a ferocious beast, and with his calm and astute mind in battle, he was the strongest fighting machine.

Tang Tian might lose in terms of techniques or realm, but in a real battle where blades and spears were involved, Du Ke firmly believed without hesitation that Tang Tian would come out on top, like himself.

Du Ke took a deep breath, as though a regiment of flames was

burning in his heart.

He had always desired for Tang Tian to win. And he always desired to participate in a battle with Tang Tian. The citizens of Saint Continent were Temple's children, whether they were alive or dead did not matter to him, but he was still furious.

That's right, fury, it was a fury that surged from the deepest parts of his heart.

The sky filled with Golden Holy Flames emitted a divine aura, but it made Du Ke disgusted.

At the highest command of Southern Alliance.

“The time for a full force attack has come.”

Bing was different from usual, he did not hold onto any cigarettes, he stood in front of the map with a solemn expression. His gaze swept across the various generals in front of him, the majority of them still had naive and youthful faces. But all of these youths were already veterans and experts on the battlefield, they had abundant fighting experiences and their reputations were well known. In the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy, no one dared to look down on them.

Their eyes flashed with excitement, but their faces maintained steadiness.

Xie Yu An was in deep thoughts, the last time, he had sensed that Master Bing's emotions was not right, and he had confirmed the conjecture. To him, the time for the full force attack was not right, Mo Xin, Qiu Xu Hua and Gou Cheng WenDao had misgivings towards each other, but they were still able to maintain their self control.

The internal strife in Temple had caused an intense unrest, the arousal from the conflicting views still required time to ferment, and if they were to make their move, they could easily force the

already breaking down enemies to band together again.

Xie Yu An firmly believed that if he could see it, Master Bing would be able to see it as well. But Bing was still persistent in doing it, and it was obviously a forced matter. And in the Southern Alliance, there was only one man that could make Bing make such a decision, and that was the leader of the Southern Alliance, Tang Tian!

Xie Yu An could roughly guess that Master Tang Tian was probably in a dangerous situation, while Bing was planning to make use of the full force attack to draw the attention of the Honorable Martial Continent to ease the pressure on Tang Tian.

He did not speak out, but instead, supported Master Bing's decision. Although the current situation was not the most optimal for a full force attack, but Master Tang Tian's importance far outweighed the potential loss.

The period of Tang Tian's disappearance led to Bing managing the daily work. Bing's term of work was thorough and methodically sound, the results were apparent, and the Southern Alliance's strength took a qualitative leap. Compared to it, Master Tang Tian did not seem to have any existence. But the core members of the Southern Alliance knew that Tang Tian was irreplaceable in the Southern Alliance, no matter how well Bing performed, he was unable to replace Master Tang Tian.

Although Tang Tian was not around, his influence on the Southern Alliance never stopped. Privately, everyone knew that Master Bing was able to connect to Master Tang Tian in a mysterious method.

Master Bing was an outstanding commander, but not an outstanding leader.

Thinking about that, Xie Yu An suddenly felt puzzled, Usually, I don't even feel the existence of Master Tang Tian, why do I keep thinking that Master Tang Tian is a good leader?

There was no doubt on Tang Tian's importance to the Southern Alliance, and for his sake, it was even acceptable for them to lose a few armies. But if something had truly happened to Master Tang Tian, no matter how much advantage they had in the battlefield, it was useless for the entire situation.

Furthermore, Xie Yu An had a guess that he never told anyone, in which he suspected that Master Tang Tian had infiltrated the Honorable Martial Continent. He guessed it out from a few clues, for example, Master Bing's dispatch of armies over the battlefield seemed to be intentionally attracting Honorable Martial Continent's attention. He had a feeling, that if Master Tang Tian was in Honorable Martial Continent, he would definitely annoy the hell out of Honorable Martial Continent and create complete confusion.

Alright, maybe I'm thinking too much.....

Xie Yu An threw all of the complicated thoughts to the back of his mind, and placed his focus back on the battlefield, his mind working quickly. Even when he was at the backlines, he had secretly kept in contact with the frontlines. Although they were not in an optimal time to launch a full force attack, but it was not as terrible as one might think it would be. Furthermore, from another point of view, the enemies were in much more terrible situations, if they were able to overwhelm the enemies, they could probably incite the fall of Honorable Martial Continent.

Within his calm eyes, a rarely seen excitement flashed, and the blood within his body started to boil.

Chapter 932 – The Huo Family’s Decision [2 in 1]

In just a few days, Sadra seemed to have aged a decade, his grizzled hair had turned white, and there were more wrinkles on his face. His face no longer had the usual calmness and steadiness, only a deep lethargy could be seen, and even his back had become crooked and old.

By his side, Huo Liu Shang and the rest all had anxious looks on their faces, and in the past few days, they had truly experienced what it meant by a day dragging past like a year. Many of their faces still had looks of lost, they did not understand why the situation had turned out like that.

A few days before, they watched how Temple looked for Senior Xin with only one man, Seuss, as he arrived in Snow City alone, and the memory of how they felt that the victory was in their grasp still remained clear in their minds. And suddenly, they dropped from Heaven to Hell. It was so fast that they were unable to even react in time. All of their advantages disappeared, and they were sealed in Saint Continent. The Great Clan Elder’s insane and cruelty had made them feel what true fear was.

Temple was even able to massacre a continent worth of citizens as though it was nothing, how would Temple ever let them live. Everything that happened in Saint Continent would forever remain a secret that no one would know. They would all be executed as offenders who tried to destroy the Saint Continent, and their successors and future generations would always be shamed. Alright, they need not worry about future generations, Temple would never let their successors live.

A Great Clan Elder that was able to massacre the entire Saint Continent, how would he not know about pulling the weed by its roots? Destroying an entire clan or family was a small matter

compared to destroyed the entire Saint Continent, it was not worth mentioning.

The past few days had been a nightmare for them.

Everyday, more and more people would be devoured by the Holy Flames, they watched on helplessly as their own comrades scream in anguish and die, and it was a torture for all of them. After that, whoever got infected by the Holy Flames would be put to death by their own comrades.

But, although their lives could end, but the pain of their souls burning was something they could not escape from.

They watched the souls struggle in the Holy Flame, all of them able to feel the pain contained within the silent and berserk motions of the souls. The morale of the camp fell to a low, and they all suspected that as long as Temple sent someone down to demand for people to surrender, more than half would immediately do so.

But no one came down, as though everyone in Temple were asleep.

What caused even more panic was the torment of waiting for their deaths had made some people fall apart, and even their souls being devoured to die peacefully became an extravagant hope.

The camp was deadly silent, everyone looked as though they had lost their souls, their eyes dull without any signs of life.

Suddenly, someone shouted out loud: “Quickly look! In the sky!”

Sadra immediately raised his head, his eyes instantly constricted, and the wrinkles on his face became more apparent.

Is it finally beginning?

In his vision, the dense golden holy flames in the sky seemed to be attracted to something, and were all moving in one direction. It was the first time the Holy Flames were doing something different in the past few days.

That direction is....

“Temple! That’s the direction to Temple!” Mo Yi Gu exclaimed out loud.

Direction to Temple! Everyone’s mind jolted, all of them stood up and looked into the distance.

The Holy Flames floating in the sky were all moving in the direction where Temple was. Although their speed was not fast, but they were truly moving, and the direction was clearly to Temple.

What happened at Temple? Everyone were all curious.

Temple was not situated far away, but it was definitely not near either, and there were a few cities between them.

“We have already failed.” Sadra spoke up, he had already regained his calm, and seeing that everyone were looking at him, he laughed bitterly: “Or do you all think that our situation can become any worse?”

Everyone were startled, they remained silent.

~That’s right, can it be worse than this?”

“I will go take a look!” Huo Liu Shang spoke up: “Whether I live or die, at least I will go down with a bang, it is better than doing nothing!”

His words convinced everyone else, and immediately a few others followed.

“I will go too!”

“Yes, at least it will be better than now!”

“Let’s go take a look.”

They followed behind Huo Liu Shang, and headed towards Temple. They carefully avoided the moving Holy Flames en route, and did not stop once.

But when they arrived at Temple, they realized that it was empty. The only moving things were the Holy Flames in the sky that flew towards the fiery Pillars that were near Temple. The countable specks of Holy Flames entered the Fiery Pillars, and although the Fiery Pillars did not appear to have any changes, Huo Liu Shang was able to sense a powerful aura being birthed inside it.

Huo Liu Shang was overwhelmed with shock, ~What's inside that pillar?~

Suddenly, a terrifying thought flashed past his mind, Are the Great Clan Elder and the rest inside these pillars?

He counted them, and ended up with a total of fourteen fiery pillars that was absorbing Holy Flames endlessly, the scene a shock to them. Huo Liu Shang raised his head up, and looked at the endless streams of Holy Flames in the sky, the fear in his heart had reached an unprecedented level. The first thing that popped in his mind was to run, but he firmly suppressed the impulse, the entire Saint Continent was sealed, where could they run to?

He forced his eyes to remain open as he watched the fourteen pillars devouring everything like fourteen insatiable mouths.

He finally understood why the Great Clan Elder would not even let the citizens go. The Holy Flames in the sky was not to deal with the families or to seal the Saint Continent, but for the fourteen fiery pillars, or for the fourteen monsters inside.

An extremely cold chill pervaded through his body.

The citizens of Saint Continent were food for Temple's monsters, the fourteen monsters being groomed right here.

All of a sudden, Huo Liu Shang's eyes turned blood red, an unprecedented rage surged in his chest. How many lives were taken, all of those innocent people, they were just ordinary citizens.

And....they are all humans, how can they be treated as food?

Unprecedented fear came with the rage, a deep sense of fear.

He had groomed the entire Saint Continent, and if everyone's power were focused on these fourteen, what monsters will they be?

This had surpassed the limits of Huo Liu Shang's understanding, but he knew that the things that would be born from the fourteen pillars would be true monsters.

A roar came out by his side, one of the military general screamed at the closest Fiery Pillar and launched an attack, but all of which were futile. He did not even cause any ripple on the Fiery Pillar. And before anyone could react, Holy Flames surrounded them from all directions, and locked the military general down.

The golden holy flames instantly burnt his body, and before he could even scream, he was turned into ashes.

"We will leave now!"

Huo Liu Shang had a change in expression, The monsters inside the pillars can control the Holy Flames around them!

Everyone were shocked by the scene, and all of them retreated.

The group flew for over ten kilometers before stopping. After travelling for so far, the fiery pillars still remained large and majestic, and they were still as insignificant. From this, they were able to have a glimpse of the complete picture. The vast sea of Holy Flames were moving towards the fourteen gigantic fiery pillars, causing those who witnessed it to feel numb.

Huo Liu Shang was in a daze, he felt as though strength was being drawn out from his body. How could they ever win such terrifying enemies?

But he was after all still a powerful man, and he knew to have despair and fear at such a time would only lead them to death faster.

“Let’s go back first.” He gritted his teeth and said resolutely.

His eyes swept across the group by his side, all of them had despair and fear written all over their faces, even Huo Li Ruo, who was known to not fear anything, was as pale as a white sheet of paper, and his fingers were trembling.

Huo Liu Shang that it was useless to speak further. How could he, if he was also feeling what they were feeling?

Without saying anything, he led the group silently.

The rest followed him quietly, at such a time, no one had the interest to even talk. But all of them knew that the time when the monsters from the pillars appeared was the time that everything would end.

After seeing everything in a day, the last thread of hope in their heart was completely shattered.

They did not speak for the entire journey.

In the blink of the eye, they were about to reach back to their camp, when Huo Li Ruo suddenly caught something from the corner of his eye. He was startled, and subconsciously turned to look. What he saw was Holy Flames and nothing else. They were scattered on the same level without end.

There isn’t any place that we can hide.....

Huo Li Ruo was at a loss, and only reacted after a moment, he could not resist but laugh, Why do I still harbor hope at such a time? Or am I subconsciously thinking that as long as there’s a bit of hope, we can change something?

He shook his head, and continued moving. After a moment, he suddenly stopped.

He looked around, his expression was somewhat queer, he felt as though he had sensed something, and he was sure that he was not mistaken. Huo Liu Shang and the rest had already left him behind,

but he did not care, and looked around.

If it had happened once, I might have been mistaken, but to feel it twice, It definitely isn't a mistake.

What is it?

He stopped in his place and looked around.

The only thing that I can see, aside from Holy Flames, it's just Holy Flames....could it be....the Holy Flames?

Huo Li Ruo's mind trembled, he looked around carefully at the Holy Flames around him.

Wait a minute!

His eyes lit up, he finally found the location that had caught his attention. He was right, it was the Holy Flames, in his vision, there were actually a portion of Holy Flames that was actually heading in a completely different location.

"There's a situation!" He shouted out loud.

Upon hearing that, Huo Liu Shang stopped, he turned back, only to see the distance between them and Huo Li Ruo.

"There's a situation there!" Huo Li Ruo shouted out loud and waved at everyone.

He instantly became excited, any changes at such a time was a good thing for them. They were already at the worst possible situation, no matter how bad the small change was, it could not lead them any worse. But what if it was a good thing?

Huo Liu Shang was the first to react, he immediately shot forward and got to Huo Li Ruo, and asked excitedly: "What happened?"

The trembling of his voice revealed his excitement, the others reacted and immediately ran over.

Huo Li Ruo did not joke, he was equally excited, he pointed to the

Holy Flames in the sky: “Holy Flames! A portion of the Holy Flames are heading in that direction!”

Huo Liu Shang followed Huo Li Ruo’s fingers, his eyes instantly lit up, Huo Li Ruo is right, there is indeed a portion of Holy Flames flying towards another direction apart from Temple.

“Go! Take a look!” He said without hesitation, and immediately took the lead and followed the direction in which the Holy Flame were heading to.

The rest were instantly aroused and followed.

They followed on, and quickly realized that more and more Holy Flames were heading towards the same direction. They got more surprised, as the amount of Holy Flames was not inferior to those heading to Temple.

Everyone’s excitement went down as fear crept in once again.

Could it be that the number of monsters that Temple is growing is more than fourteen? Upon thinking about that, everyone’s mind started to tense up. That’s right, Temple is so big and they have so much power, fourteen monsters is a bit too little. To them, they felt that it was not surprising if Temple had fourteen monsters in every city.

Everyone’s heart became tense, the morale that was uplifted previously dropped further.

Huo Liu Shang behaved more calmly, even if there were fourteen more monsters, the situation could not get any worse. He had felt the terrifying aura that was faintly revealed from the fiery pillars, and knew how scary the monsters were. He even felt that they would be even more terrifying, because he did not know what the result of the Holy Flames converging on the fourteen were.

He had a premonition, that the fourteen monsters were existences beyond the limits of a human’s imagination.

He noticed that Huo Li Ruo’s expression seemed strange. With a

thought, he immediately sensed that Huo Li Ruo had a discovery, and asked: “What’s wrong?”

“That direction....” Huo Li Ruo was unsure: “It seems like its towards Snow City.”

“Snow City?” Huo Liu Shang was startled for a moment, but immediately, he had a revelation, and became completely excited.

That’s right, isn’t this direction towards Snow City?

With Huo Li Ruo’s reminder, he immediately realised the thing he had overlooked. He smacked his own head in annoyance, How can I forget about such an obvious matter, I was over worried.

Snow City!

He would never ever forget about this city, it was inside that city that they fell from Heavens straight to Hell. But it was also the same city that they felt a glimmer of hope when they were in the deepest despair.

Snow City, Mace Field Tradings!

Huo Liu Shang immediately recalled that Mace Field Tradings was still in Snow City, at that time when they were anxiously gathering their troops and left Snow City, Mace Field Tradings did not follow them.

Could it be Mace Field Tradings that are doing something?

Upon thinking about it, Huo Liu Shang felt his entire body brimming with strength. That’s right, Mace Field Tradings has the unfathomable Senior Xin and the powerful Iron Mask Army, maybe they have some idea?

Huo Liu Shang was self reflecting for completely forgetting the existence of Mace Field Tradings. Regardless of what relation they had previously, they were all now survivors of the Saint Continent, and were allies!

They were unable to fly in Saint Continent, thus they used all of

their efforts to sprint.

When they arrived outside Snow City, they were shocked by the scene that welcomed them. Every single person stopped in their tracks, and stared blankly at the gigantic monster in Snow City. All of them had their mouths wide opened, all of them had forgotten how to speak.

A gigantic cyclone had covered the sky of Snow City, and it looked as though there was a monstrous mouth above the cyclone, where all the Holy Flames surged in through, transforming into a golden stream that poured into the cyclone.

The fiery pillars that they saw previously were as calm as gentlemen compared to the gigantic cyclone in front of them. Even the speed of devouring were of completely different levels, Temple's fiery pillars were like docile gentlemen that ate with proper etiquette at the dinner table. But the cyclone in front of them was like a monstrous beast that was starved in its cage and let out, it was devouring and gorging itself, its stomach an eternal never ending pit.

Even by watching the golden stream from afar, Huo Liu Shang could hear their shrieks swarming into the cyclone.

The entire Snow City was overshadowed by the gigantic beast, and what was even more revering was that the cyclone was still growing at an alarming rate.

“Oh my god!” Huo Li Ruo watched the terrifying beast in a daze.

Huo Liu Shang regained himself from the sudden shock, he immediately noticed a few panicked figures inside the city. When he looked carefully, he was right! It was Mace Field Trading! He did not see Senior Xin, but he saw Melissa and the Iron Mask Army. He also noticed that although they looked panicked, they were not in chaos, and were all observing the cyclone in the sky.

Huo Liu Shang was unable to contain his excitement, he was like

a traveler dehydrating in the desert that he stumbled upon an oasis. As though he felt life coming back into him, Huo Liu Shang started to cry.

Very quickly, Mace Field People noticed them, and all became cautious.

Huo Liu Shang stabilized his emotions, then called for his group to hold ground, and led Huo Li Ruo up.

All the surrounding Holy Flames were being spun in the air by the cyclone, thus there was no need for them to be worried about the Holy Flames. There was no energy for defense, thus Ji Ze and the rest quickly recovered, along with their fighting strength. Seeing Huo Li Ruo and the rest, they immediately spread out and maintained vigilance.

Ji Ze and Fu Zheng Zhi looked at each other, they knew without speaking, as long as the other party made any strange movements, they would attack without hesitation. Although Huo Liu Shang and his group looked to be in rather terrible shapes and would most probably not try anything funny, but what if? Master is still inside the cyclone, if they were affected, we have to protect Young Miss Qian Hui as well, both of them felt more pressure on themselves.

Huo Liu Shang and Huo Li Ruo raised both of their hands, indicating that they had no ill intent.

They walked closer, and Huo Liu Shang bowed respectfully, then asked: "Can I enquire, is Senior Xin inside the cyclone?"

Ji Ze saw Huo Li Ruo's eyes gleaming, and instantly became tense, and got into a posture that could allow him to attack at any moment.

As Tang Tian was not present, the next in line with the highest authority was Qian Hui. She stood out and replied: "That's right."

"I am Huo Liu Shang, I represent the Huo Family to plead for

Senior Xin to protect us.” Huo Liu Shang knelt on the ground and spoke slowly and solemnly: “The entire Huo Family, is willing to serve under Senior Xin.....”

Qian Hui interrupted him as she spoke calmly: “Ah Xin is my General, and aside from my Lord Husband, no one else can be the Master here, they are all the generals of my Lord Husband, you should consider it again.”

Huo Liu Shang was shocked, he had initially thought that Senior Xin was the leader of the group, but he did not expect that Senior Xin was actually the general of the young beauty standing in front of him. What he did not expect even more was that the leader of the group was actually the lady’s husband.

Ji Ze and Fu Zheng Zhi were surprised, from the start, Young Miss Qian Hui had never displayed any unique traits to them, and they only knew that the Master and Qian Hui were childhood lovers with extremely deep emotions for on another. It was only after those powerful and resonating words did everyone feel the prominent aura from Qian Hui.

The two of them looked at each other again, Lady Boss is also not normal as well!

For Fu Zheng Zhi, who was a man proficient in bootlicking, he already started to reflect and regret why he had not attempted to curry favor from the Lady Boss.

Huo Liu Shang tried to probe: “I wonder if Young Miss’ husband is around? What family is the master from?”

Previously when Qian Hui called Tang Tian her Lord Husband, she was in a calm and composed state of mind, but upon hearing Huo Liu Shang calling Tang Tian her husband, a surge of bashfulness surged from her heart, and a red flush silently crept up her neck to her face. But she maintained a straight face and replied: “He is inside the cyclone, I will not hide it from you, Lord Husband is not from Honorable Martial Continent. Alright, we will

keep it as such, weigh the pros and cons yourself, you only have one opportunity, and there will be no further chances after this.”

Upon hearing that, Huo Liu Shang knew he had no other way, and without hesitation, he saluted in respect: “I am willing!”

Regardless of where they came from, even if they were not from Honorable martial Continent, so what? Temple was already the public enemy, and if Temple won, no one else would survive. Temple would definitely not allow news of what happened to the Saint Continent to be revealed, otherwise, even if the Great Clan Elder won, he would not be able to receive the support from the citizens.

No one would be willing to support the crazy and ruthless Great Clan Elder.

Huo Liu Shang’s decision made him relax. When his eyes looked upon the cyclone, he knew that only another monster could defeat a monster. He also knew that Temple would not accept them surrendering, furthermore, they would never yield to Temple. How could a being that had massacred all of the citizens of Saint Continent care about killing a few more captives? If he spared them, what would happen if the matter were to be leaked out?

Huo Liu Shang could only rely on Mace Field Tradings, he knew that he had no grounds to haggle, because he had no chips to play. He had no other choice as well, if the Great Clan Elder truly won, it would be a disaster to Honorable martial Continent. For their families, it was worse.

At such a level, the Families no longer held any meaning, even if they defeated Temple, they had no power to govern the entire Honorable Martial Continent.

Huo Liu Shang’s emotions were in a tangle. If Temple won, they would all die, their families would be slaughtered, and at that time, the Honorable Martial Continent would no longer be the same. If they won, the Honorable Martial Continent would no longer exist,

Temple would be completely wiped out, so who could take over Honorable Martial Continent?

The powerful Honorable Martial Continent had fallen to such a state in the blink of an eye, I too am a sinner.....

Huo Liu Shang felt that he was a joke, Why am I contemplating about it when we are already at this stage, he bowed to Qian Hui: “This subordinate will bring my family over.”

“Go.” Qian Hui nodded her head.

When Huo Li Ruo returned to receive his family members, he was still in a daze, he never expected their Patriarch to be so decisive, who did not have any hesitation to throw away all of his dignity and honor to become a subordinate of another person.

The Huo Family is one of the powerful Aristocrat Prestigious Families....how could it be....

Since young, this point had been deeply ingrained inside his mind, but the Patriarch's actions had completely toppled his impression of the family.

As though he knew what Huo Li Ruo was thinking, Huo Liu Shang spoke out without even turning his head back: “Are you very surprised? Only through this, can we survive, can our Huo Family survive. They will also make the right choice.”

Huo Li Ruo knew who the Patriarch was talking about, he was pointing at Sadra and the other Patriarchs.

He did not know what to say, and remained quiet.

Chapter 933 – First Probe

As expected, Sadra and the rest made the same choice. Especially after they saw the gigantic and terrifying cyclone, they had no other alternative thoughts.

Their predicament left them no choice, the families' alliance was already destroyed. Each family had huge losses, at least more than 30% of their forces were gone. Such a huge loss was not enough to destroy the few families, but most importantly, they had no way of retreat, they were in a position of despair, and the families who chose to leave would only die even faster.

The painful losses was a terrible experience for any of the families.

But the place where it was harmed the most was the morale and confidence.

In the past, the reason why Sadra and the rest were unhappy about their situation and dared to contend with Temple for authority was mostly because of their confidence, and was the ambition of the various heroes of the Prestigious Families. They firmly believed that they were the true masters of Honorable Martial Continent, and believed that they had the qualifications to share the power over Honorable Martial Continent with Temple.

This ambition did not come from nothing or from their profound accumulation of wealth, but from their ancestors who used their own hands and blood to build a powerful and strong foundation, through the generations of victories, through countless glories, through the countless days accumulating their beliefs, that formed their identities as Prestigious Families.

But this time, all of their beliefs and conviction were completely destroyed. In the face of the Great Clan Elder, they were rendered weak and helpless like children. The casualties of the various families increased, and they realized that they were unable to

change the situation. They had nowhere to run, and the fear of waiting to die nibbled away their courage, their vitality, and like that, even their hope started to dwindle away.

Their decision to join under Tang Tian meant that they had completely gave up their pride as the top of the food chain, and from then on, they would be treated as mortals on plain earth.

Sadra and the other Patriarchs knew of it, but compared to the complete destruction of their families, what was losing their pride? At least their families could continue surviving.

Sadra and the rest had no other choice.

They finally realized that they were just mortals, and the battle they were in were fought by monsters. At such a time, they no longer had the luxury to blame themselves for the foolishness, their strength had determined that they could only be supporting roles in the battlefield, which included the strength that supported their ambitions.

Sadra and the other Patriarchs saw the glimmer of hope that was glowing on their family members' faces, and the pain in their hearts lessened. All of the Holy Flames around Snow City were being drawn in by the Sword Tempest Cyclone, allowing all of the soldiers who had overstretched their brain activity to quickly fall into deep sleep.

Finally, they were able to have a safe rest.

Everyone hoped that their monster would win, and prayed towards the gigantic cyclone.

Time continued to pass, and the atmosphere in Snow City became even heavier. The soldiers responsible for observing the fourteen pillars at Temple returned to report the changes.

Everyone immediately became alert. Sadra and the few other Patriarchs personally went to visit Temple.

The fourteen pillars at Temple had started to crystallize at its

base, and the golden fiery pillars were congealing into golden crystals. The fourteen terrifying auras were completely different from what they had experienced the few days before, every one of them had become even more violent. The monsters inside the fiery pillars started to grow in strength and heartbeat, which sounded like drums, every beat resonated and caused the sky to ripple. Even from the distance, they could hear the impatient breaths.

Sadra and the rest had a premonition, that when the monsters inside the fiery pillars had completely metamorphosed, and could appear at any moment.

They were afraid, the cyclone was still growing without any signs of completion. But if the Great Clan Elder and the fourteen monsters were to appear first, they would instantly be in danger, and the situation seemed to be turning into the direction that they did not desire for.

What they did not know was that in the sky behind them, Du Ke was observing the fiery pillars with a solemn expression. Since he had mimicked the Holy Flames and cheated the seal in the sky, he was able to fly wherever he wished.

Du Ke was able to sense the terrifying auras inside the fiery pillars, and the Holy Flames were unable to block his sight, allowing him to see through the fiery pillars clearly.

Countless of golden silk that resembled a human's veins, and converged towards a Spirit General from various parts of the fiery pillars. Du Ke instantly realized, Spirit Generals, those strange flames were prepared for Spirit Generals.

Du Ke's expression remained serious, he was able to sense the strength of the Spirit Generals, and they were at an unprecedented level that he had never seen before. It was not an unfathomable realm, but just the accumulation of power. In his eyes, there were no techniques that purely accumulated power, but the uncountable store of power was forcing the Spirit Generals to

metamorphosize again and again.

Du Ke never thought that the world actually had such a simple and violent method to grow powerful martial artists.

That's right, the Spirit Generals inside every Fiery Pillar released auras that were like monsters climbing out from uncultivated floods. Even from the distance, he could sense the terrifying auras of the Spirit Generals. They did not even conceal their auras, every Spirit General felt as if they were formed by the oceans of Holy Flames. The ripples formed by the compression of the huge volume of power was simply unconcealable, and he was able to clearly see the Spirit Generals inside the fiery pillars distorting as Laws were in chaos.

It was the pinnacle of power compression, one never seen in history.

Du Ke squinted his eyes, his heart overwhelmed with shock. He finally understood why Temple required so many Holy Flames. He could feel that through the fiery screen flowing in the sky formed by the unknown connection of the other fiery pillars, the fourteen pillars were able to continuously absorb the Holy Flames floating in Saint Continent.

Truly terrifying.....

When anything reached its pinnacle, many things could happen.

Every single Spirit General posed a threat to him. His enlightenment of Laws were at the pinnacle, and the Law Domain he had was a matchless power, but the power accumulated inside every individual Spirit General was much larger than the power he could utilize.

Just the pure power was sufficient to pose a threat to his laws.

Right at that moment, suddenly, the Spirit General inside the middle pillar opened his eyes, with his cold and indifferent glare, he looked at Du Ke.

Du Ke's heart was shocked, The enemy discovered me!

He quickly calmed down, although the enemy was powerful, but he still had absolute confidence in his own strength. Yes, even with his Law Domain, the enemy could still pose a threat to him, but at the same time, no matter how vast the enemy's power was, his Law Domain was also a threat to his enemy.

It was just that the situation was not advantageous for him, but he was not alone.

The Great Clan Elder could sense the threat from Du Ke, and was inwardly shocked, his eyes gleamed with a light: "So you are a surviving member of Sin Domain!"

The Great Clan Elder's voice shot out from the fiery pillar, and the Holy Flames in the sky suddenly became agitated. Du Ke felt as though he was in a torrential storm, winds blew against him, and the Holy Flames all pounced towards him ferociously, as though they wanted to burn him to ashes.

Du Ke remained calm. The air around him turned sluggish, and no matter how violent the Holy Flames were, they were unable to enter a 30m radius of him.

The Holy Flames in the sky transformed into a wave, which flowed towards Du Ke with an earth shattering power, causing the entire sky to tremble.

"Temple treats its citizen worse than pigs and dogs, and slaughtered all of them just to nourish your own bodies, your sins are beyond redemption, even with a hundred deaths, you can never redeem yourself!"

The Holy Flames covered Du Ke's figure, but Du Ke's voice came out clearly from the Holy Flames, in which the rumblings could not conceal.

Du Ke's figure was revealed once more, he was like a rock situated in the middle of a stream, while the Holy Flames were like

the water, that flowed around him. He was unharmed, and remained indifferent, but his tone was resounding and powerful.

The Great Clan Elder's face turned dark, he knew that he was unable to do anything to Du Ke, and sneered: "You can speak all you want. History is written by the victors, the losers will become the evil one, I want to see whether you will still be able to smile when we come out."

With that, he no longer cared about Du Ke, but his absorption of Holy Flames increased.

Du Ke also knew that he was unable to do anything or stop the enemy, all the Fiery Pillars and the fiery screen in the sky were of one entity. If he tried to attack one, it meant attacking all of it, which he held no chance of winning.

And when the Spirit Generals completed their metamorphosis, their bodies would undergo qualitative changes, at that time, they would no longer need to enter the fiery pillars, and would no longer require the power of the fiery pillars.

These Spirit Generals are almost completely metamorphosed.

Du Ke looked at the pillars, then turned towards another direction, as he could sense a portion of the Holy Flames surging in the other direction. Furthermore, he could sense a familiar aura from the said location.

Tang Tian!

Du Ke instantly became excited, no matter how powerful the enemy was, Tang Tian would not sit idly either. Seeing how plenty of Holy Flames were surging towards Tang Tian as well, Du Ke's mind instantly worked, Could it be that Tang Tian is also using the Holy Flames?

The more he thought, the more possible he felt that it was, and he became curious. Tang Tian was a man not held by common sense, and could always perform extraordinary and strange things,

this was something Du Ke had concluded of Tang Tian. And if Tang Tian did not do anything strange, Du Ke would feel that that would be strange.

He immediately increased his speed, as though he was skiing on the Holy Flames, he flew extremely fast. The terrifying Holy Flames were unable to do anything to him.

Below, Sadra and the other Patriarchs were dumbstruck, they did not recognize Du Ke, but when they saw how he was able to fly despite the restrictions in the sky, and could still fight against the Great Clan Elder, they saw how he was not at an disadvantage.

Powerful!

All of them had the same feeling, as the moment they went closer to Temple, they would already be terrified. But the attack of the Holy Flames were so violent, yet they were unable to harm Du Ke. Sadra and the rest felt as though their knowledge of the world was being toppled, as one after another, random powerful existences were appearing.

The only clue they had was the term “Remaining Survivor of Sin Domain”. But, since when did Sin Domain have such powerful people? He is too powerful, and looks young.

Wait a minute!

They suddenly reacted, Isn't the direction that the powerful Sin Domain martial artist, towards Snow City?

Everyone looked at each other, and frantically sprinted back to Snow City.

Chapter 934 – Du Ke's Response

When Ji Ze and Fu Zheng Zhi saw Du Ke, they were ecstatic, the shadow casted by the fame of the man, as the Number one man of Sin Domain, the prestige and impact that Du Ke had on everyone in Sin Domain was extremely powerful. Furthermore, seeing how Du Ke alone could fly in the sky, they knew that he was definitely worthy of being called the strongest.

When the Strongest man of Sin Domain saw the cyclone floating above Snow City, his mouth was wide open on his stunned face.

After a long time, he turned his neck, which resulted in a 'crack crack crack' sound, like an extremely rusted mechanism, causing Ji Ze and the rest to worry that his neck would break.

“Is Master inside?” He looked at Ji Ze in shock with an extended finger pointing weakly to the cyclone.

As expected of the strongest man of Sin Domain, his foresight is so powerful! Ji Ze immediately nodded his head: “Yes, Master has been inside for a few days, with Ah Xin, Xiao Ran and the rest.”

Inside for a few days.....

Du Ke looked up, and as he saw the stream of Holy Flames being pulled in, the corner of his mouth twitched. Upon thinking about the fiery pillars at Temple previously, in which he thought was already a shocking scene, the cyclone's speed of devouring the Holy Flames was even more terrifying. The only thing that he could think of saying at that moment was Xiao Du I, am just a country bumpkin, and haven't seen the world yet.

The gigantic mouth of the cyclone was the biggest volcanic crater he had ever seen in his life, the golden streams that poured in from the sky left him with only one thought in mind, A whale's mouth!, alright, maybe it was not the right example, but he felt as if it was a flood being reversed.

After witnessing the majestic scene before him, he calmed down. That's right, if Master Tang Tian didn't do anything surprising, how is he Master Tang Tian? Previously, Du Ke still had some restraining fear towards the Great Clan Elder, but after witnessing the huge cyclone, he forgot those emotions. Whoever saw the cyclone that covered half the sky, would instantly feel as though the world had opened up before them.

"Who is Ah Xin and Xiao Ran?" Du Ke casually asked, after he had calmed down, he found those names unfamiliar, Are they new?

Towards Du Ke, the God Armor Army were extremely respectful. Fu Zheng Zhi spoke up: "Ah Xin and Xiao Ran are Spirit Generals, they are Young Miss Qian Hui's generals, Young Miss Qian Hui is Master's future wife."

"Spirit Generals? We have Spirit Generals as well? Are the both of them Spirit Generals?" Du Ke immediately became excited, Could it be that Master had already guessed Temple's plan? Cunning! Truly cunning! He was actually one step ahead, I am truly liking it. Damn, I used to be such an open and candid brat, but now I have been corrupted by Master.

With two more experts like this, it will be good, it will be good.

Du Ke's mood became much better, the fourteen terrifying existences had impacted him greatly previously.

Fu Zheng Zhi replied: "yes, they are both Spirit Generals, their soldiers as well, they are all Spirit Generals, with a total of one hundred and twenty of them."

"One.....one hundred and twenty? Spirit.... Spirit Generals?" Du Ke felt as though his mind could not process the number as he stammered.

One hundred and twenty Spirit Generals.....he suddenly felt as if the powerful auras emitted from the fourteen fiery pillars from

before were nothing. He finally understood why the scale of the cyclone was so huge, and why its speed of devouring the Holy Flames was so terrifying.

There are actually one hundred and twenty Spirit Generals here!

If that old fogey inside that pillar knows about this, will he cry?

“Yes.” Fu Zheng Zhi saw Du Ke’s expression, and was inwardly anxious for Du Ke, Why is Master Du Ke only worried about the Spirit Generals, why can’t he grasp the important point? He could not help but reminded Du Ke: “They are Young Miss Qian Hui’s generals, and Young Miss Qian Hui is Master’s future wife.”

He had raised his pitch when saying “Young Miss Qian Hui”, You are still young, you still don’t have experience! Young man, do you know what wind (Feng) is the most powerful? Pillow talk (Zhen Bian Feng)! If you offend Master Tang Tian, Master will at most beat you up. But if you offend Lady Boss, hehe, death is just but the beginning, you won’t even know who will do you in.

(TN: So this is just a play with chinese characters, wind in chinese is Feng, and pillow talk in chinese is zhen bian feng, everyone should know what pillow talk means, so yea, if anyone offends Qian Hui and she tells it to Tang Tian while they are in bed, yea.)

Master’s Future Wife....

Du Ke’s pupils immediately turned round, as though he had rolled and dropped from Heaven.

“I say, which family’s young lady is so beautiful and so classy, so she is actually Lady Boss! Boss is truly fortunate, look at her, Master has truly struck it big! We are also extremely fortunate, with Lady Boss’ guidance, we will definitely keep to the right track, and be invincible, all those who stand in our way will be struck down easily. Upon seeing Lady Boss, Xiao Du, I, already felt kindred spirits and close....”

Du Ke instantly became passionate, as though he had found a long lost relative.

Fu Zheng Zhi, who was previously mocking Du Ke, was dumbstruck upon hearing Du Ke's words. It was not only him, even Ji Ze, who had a look of respect towards Du Ke, froze on the spot.

Xiao Du....

(TN: Which means Little Du)

Upon seeing the middle aged man call himself "Xiao Du, I". Ji Ze and Fu Zheng Zhi felt a cold breeze, and got goosebumps.

Hey, You are the strongest man of Sin Domain.....

Even Qian Hui flushed red upon hearing Du Ke shout out "Lady Boss".

Sadra and the other Patriarchs had coincidentally witnessed the scene while arriving in gasps for breaths. Sadra, Huo Liu Shang and the rest looked at each other, and instantly read the situation clearly. They had witnessed Du Ke's powerful bearing, who was not inferior to the Great Clan Elder. But the absolutely powerful man remained so respectful in front of Young Miss Qian Hui, he seems to be flattering her, how unfathomable are Boss and Lady Boss!

Could it be that Boss and Lady Boss came from Sin Domain? If not why are the powerful Sin Domain martial artists serving them?

"Don't think about it, we are not qualified to think about such matters." Mo Yi Gu suddenly spoke out.

The others were silent, but agreed, such matters were not up to them to consider. They had no other choice regardless of the Master's history. Temple, which had performed such a savage act was already the public enemy of Honorable Martial Continent, and the thought of Temple holding authority again, was something

that caused even the bravest man to tremble.

In Sadra and the other Patriarch's eyes, anyone could become the master of Honorable Martial Continent, as long as it was not Temple. Furthermore, it was closely related to their lives.

Now that they knew that the Master's subordinates were so powerful, their morale were boosted, and hope existed in their hearts once more.

Inside the central fiery pillar at Temple, the Great Clan Elder opened his eyes.

He looked at his fist, the translucent fist had completely congealed, and aside from the faint gold color, it had no difference from a live person's hand, where even the warmth and sensation was exactly the same. It was the same for his body, it had been completely congealed.

Holy Flames and Spirit Generals were ethereal beings. But when the two were formed together and developed to their maximum, they congealed. His body was no longer translucent, but had become solid. His body, that was faintly gold increased the imposing and divine aura that he emitted, and when he raised his head, he could feel the churning power in him.

At that moment, he felt like a god.

But very quickly, his expression became gloomy again, he thought about the Sin Domain survivor that he saw previously, whose strength had surprised him. If not for his complete metamorphosis, his individual strength could not be compared to Du Ke. The Great Clan Elder could tell that Du Ke used Laws. But as for how profound Du Ke was in Laws, he was unsure.

The Great Clan Leader had the reason to be surprised, a powerful martial artist who had stepped into the highest realm of Laws, which was the Law Domain, had always been a legend.

Any form of strength, when trained to its pinnacle, would be extremely powerful, and furthermore, what Du Ke trained was Laws.

The Great Clan Elder knew that Sin Domain could only be enemies, as there were no margin of forgiveness between Sin Domain and Temple.

He had initially planned to launch an attack on Snow City, but he could not take the risk before his other Spirit Generals had completed their metamorphosis. He could feel that there was something being born in Snow City, with the large quantity of Holy Flames surging towards Snow City. He had never expected that his enemies would be able to absorb the Holy Flames, and knew that no ordinary men could understand the secrets of the Holy Flame, but the Sin Domain survivor had actually understood it and even mimicked the Flames.

But so what if you can figure it out? Sin Domain doesn't have Spirit Generals.

Upon thinking about that, the Great Clan Elder revealed a smile, How can my plan that was formulated through countless of years be so easily broken?

The Great Clan Elder was a cautious man, and Du Ke's sudden appearance had caused him to feel a bit uneasy. Although the uneasiness was a fleeting emotion, but he decided to increase his bargaining chips.

Although the enemy had stepped into the Law Domains, but the current Saint Continent was his territory. The five hundred odd Pillars of Punishment were like needles that firmly nailed down into every corner of Saint Continent, allowing him to control the entire place.

Since he needed more bargaining chips, he had to make use of the people. The Great Clan Elder looked at the Holy Flames in the sky, and a cold sneer appeared on his face.

If the Aristocrat Alliance had suffered severe casualties, then the newly built Prestigious Families were in disaster. The armies that they had were not as experienced as those of the Aristocrat Alliance, and their strength were lacking.

Against the Holy Flames, they died instantly.

What remained were less than 40% of the total population. The Aristocrat Alliance lost 30% of their population, and the various families were able to maintain the numbers. As for the new Prestigious Families, as their death toll had reached over 60%, all of them were in chaos.

The remaining people looked at the sky blankly, all of them were numb as defeat filled their hearts.

The Great Clan Elder suddenly appeared, he floated high above the sky, his body emitted a golden light that prevented anyone from looking straight at him. His terrifying presence enveloped the space beneath him, he was like a God, that made everyone feel the desire to worship to.

The people beneath had long crumbled, all of them knelt down and begged for forgiveness, they cried and begged to the Great Clan Elder in the sky.

Inside the sun dazzling light, the Great Clan Elder's sovereign voice came out and resonated across the land.

"All of you have sinned! Your loyalty had never been tested by Temple, and without the existence of radiance in all of you, I will never know. This is a minor reprimand for all of you. Since all of you are citizens of Temple, Temple has decided to give all of you an opportunity to change yourselves."

The people beneath were crying with joy.

"Remember this, everyone only have one chance!"

The Great Clan Elder chided, causing shock into everybody's eardrums, but they did not care about it.

The Great Clan Elder waved his hand, and the Pillars of Punishments nearby all shot out flows of golden light, which flowed to the Great Clan Elder, and landed on the ground to form many golden light doors.

“This is your final chance, as long as you step through these Gates of Repentance, all of you will be redeemed.”

The moment the Great Clan Elder spoke those words, the lucky survivors beneath all scrambled towards the doors.

Inside the dazzling light, the Great Clan Elder’s smile was ice cold.

Chapter 935 – Qiu Xu Hua's Choice

Beyond the golden doors were an empty space. The golden light floated in midair, and beneath it was a faint halo of light, which burnt with a transparent flame. Outside of the halo, Holy Flames surged all around like a golden ocean.

The moment the survivors stepped in, they were transformed into ashes before they could even rejoice. The transparent flames were not ferocious, but as long as the survivors stepped within the halo, they would not survive. The oblivious survivors surged in like a tide, and like water droplets being sprinkled onto a heated iron, they transformed into mist.

One after another, the survivors transformed into ashes.

The Great Clan Elder remained unmoved as he stared at the halo with indifference.

Suddenly, the Great Clan Elder's eyes lit up.

One of the lucky survivors did not turn to ashes, his body started to emit a transparent flame, and his expression was one of pain. His flesh body looked like fat oil, he slowly melted away as he burnt, until he disappeared. What remained was a dim faint figure that quietly stood inside the halo, he had a blank expression, and his forehead revealed a trace of radiance.

The Great Clan Elder frowned, the Spirit General was of average quality, but he was better than nothing. The Great Clan Elder waved his hand, and the Spirit General flew out of the halo and stepped into the sea of Holy Flames. Upon flying out of the halo, the originally calm sea of Holy Flames immediately stirred, countless of Holy Flames rushed over, and in the blink of the eye, the Spirit General was enveloped by the Holy Flames, and the golden Holy Flames transformed into red color flames, which resembled a fireball that floated in the sea of gold.

The lucky survivors kept pouring in, and the majority of them transformed into ashes, with a small possibility of transforming into Spirit Generals. In the sea of golden Holy Flames floated many red regiments that resembled cocoons.

The Great Clan Elder shook his head, As expected, the quality of the Spirit Generals are directly linked to the strength of the person. The Spirit Generals produced by the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights were of completely different qualities. But the Spirit Generals formed by the lucky survivors does not hit the requirements that I want. They are too average, and can only be used as cannon fodder.

Luckily, his original intent for them were to be cannon fodder, for Sophie and the rest to have as subordinates.

There are so many Holy Flames, if I don't use it, they will go to waste.

He felt it was a pity towards the Prestigious Families, their disciples were far more outstanding, and might possible produce better Spirit Generals. But the Aristocrat Alliance were all experienced people and were not easily swayed, it would not be easy to trick them into entering the Light Door.

The regret quickly disappeared, The Great Clan Elder had an ambitious heart, when Sophie and the other Spirit Generals were completely metamorphosed, he would be able to sweep through the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy.

It was the era for his light, the era for Temple, the era that belonged to him, he firmly believed that it would arrive.

Qiu Xu Hua looked out the window, the endless rain made him in a daze.

His request to enter thr Shang Continent was rejected by Gou Cheng WenDao, and he had no choice but to retreat, and encamp

in a small continent on the supply route. He did not expect that his anxious reinforcements that resulted in him paying a huge price actually ended on such a note, causing him to feel discouraged.

Mo Xin's fleet that was riddled with scars, were also rejected by Gou Cheng WenDao, however Mo Xin and him also were not able to group together.

The cracks between the three was something that everyone was aware of, as it was greatly related to the news of the internal strife, the hottest topic amongst everybody in Sacred Saint Galaxy. Gou Cheng WenDao was a neutral party, he did not wish to offend Temple or the Families. Thus, he held onto an unyielding stance, and had decided to wait for the internal strife and struggle for power in Honorable Martial Continent to settle.

Mo Xin belonged to the Mo Family of the Aristocrat Alliance, and since the news of the Prestigious Families abandoning the Qiu Family was no secret, friction arose between both parties, as though they were fire and water.

It was all of a sudden that the Southern Expedition's advantage quickly disappeared.

The wariness between the Great Generals at the front lines actually happened to the renowned Honorable Martial Continent, how could this not cause Qiu Xu Hua to laugh helplessly.

But his greatest worry stemmed from a secret rumor.

The Qiu Family and him were in extreme danger. The Qiu Family were the first few to join the alliance, which meant that the Qiu Family were already on Temple's blacklist. With Temple's strength, if they were to suppress the "rebellion", The Qiu Family would definitely have a difficult time escaping from their fate.

Furthermore, the Qiu Family was abandoned by the alliance, which meant that even if the alliance won the internal strife, the Qiu Family would not have good days ahead. Furthermore, the Qiu

Family had suffered too greatly, and he was the only one left, which made him think of the phrase 'a single person cannot salvage the situation'. If the alliance won, they would take the Qiu Family's assets to replenish themselves. Qiu Xu Hua understood the Prestigious Families, he understood their style of doing things, their greed and coldness, and even the Qiu Family would do it if they were in different positions.

Regardless of who the winner was, it would end up terrible for the Qiu Family. The only difference was, one would result in the Qiu Family being condemned, the other being devoured.

Just when he was uncertain for the future, he received the news, or accurately saying, an invite, that caused his entire heart to go into chaos.

For three days and three nights, he did not sleep, as he sorted out the information before him.

In truth, when the news was spread, he felt that it was extremely strange, Why didn't the Great Generals at the frontlines receive this information, but the Southern Alliance was the one to spread it? Since when was Southern Alliance's information gathering faster than us, the locals?

Following his understanding of these information, he gained many discoveries.

For example, he had realized that unknowingly, the Honorable Martial Continent's reactions and responses had become passive and restricted. It was as though there was an invisible pair of hands that were quietly molding everything according to his own plans. What made him feel even more shocked was that the pair of hands were extremely coordinated with the Southern Alliance's plans.

For example, the ambush on the supply route, Gou Cheng WenDao's need for reinforcements while Mo Xin and him were being obstructed occurred at the same time. Along with that was

the stable Honorable Martial Continent falling into internal strife that caused everyone to worry. Gold Continent Bandits, Sin Domain, Honorable Martial's Roar's devastation, and the consecutive defeats of the local armies, plunging the Honorable Martial Continent, the Continent with the most armies, to fall into the awkward situation of having insufficient manpower.

This directly led to the Holy Bell being rung, and the gathering of Armies at the Saint Continent, which made the alliance see Temple's weakness, and made them have the confidence to suppress Temple.

The impeccable timing and coordination made Qiu Xu Hua suspect that the invisible black hands was the Southern Alliance. It was no secret that the Southern Alliance Leader had gone missing for a period of time, in which they had even discussed about, but everyone felt that the most probable reason for his disappearance was because he was seeking for support, like from the Gold Continent.

Even the bravest of men would had never guessed that he had snuck into the Honorable Martial Continent.

The trail that Qiu Xu Hua followed was coincidentally the Qiu Family. The annihilation of the Qiu Offense Army had shocked Qiu Xu Hua for a long time, and thus Mace Field Tradings had also become one of his focus. If not for the direct relation, such a small Prestigious Family would had never attracted any attention. When Qiu Xu Hua studied the Mace Field Tradings Family, he suddenly realized that they were a group of people that had arrived from the Western Region. He immediately thought about the series of strange happenings in the Western Region, the fall of two Lieutenant Generals were no small matters.

It was not only that, the fall of the two Lieutenant Generals directly led to the armies of the Western Region to disappear, which was buried by the series of wars that occurred after that.

The Gold Continent's first appearance was in the Western Region, the Honorable Martial's Roar was taken from the warship cemetery in the Western Region, Lieutenant General Collin's fall also occurred in the Western Region, there were too many coincidences. The consecutive fall of three Lieutenant Generals shook Honorable Martial Continent, and made the citizens waver, and was also the beginning of the foolish actions of the Prestigious Families.

If that was all, the Honorable Martial Continent could still take it. But coincidentally, Gou Cheng WenDao's successful capture of Shang Continent had his fleet ambushed, the supply route received fervent attacks by the Southern Alliance, and Gou Cheng WenDao called for reinforcements all at the same time. At the same time, Qiu Xu Hua himself and Mo Xin were hindered, and they were unable to support Gou Cheng WenDao.

After Qiu Xu Hua thought about it, all of the incidents that occurred within the short time frame was truly too coordinated and coincidental. In some sense, it was all these small incidents that led to the build up of Honorable Martial Continent's predicament.

Regardless of how the series of incidents were completed or their impeccable timing, everything was too perfect.

With the civil war, the Southern Expedition dropped into a state of emergency, causing the hard pressed Temple to ring the Holy Bell. This decision instantly removed the shackles that Temple had on the Prestigious Families, and allowed them to see the opportunity.

It is a seriously far sighted plan, Qiu Xu Hua was completely convinced and revered the arranger who had planned so far ahead.

But the unforeseen events in the Saint Continent made him realize that the enemy's true intention was not Gou Cheng WenDao, but the Saint Continent! The enemy had planned it out

not to cause Temple to be too tired to counter, but for Temple to continuously send forces out, and form a weakness at its core.

Qiu Xu Hua guessed that Temple's decision to ring the Holy Bell went beyond the arranger's anticipation, the Prestigious Families alliance was something that the arranger could have never foreseen, but the enemy knew how to take advantage of the situation. In fact, the enemy is stronger than I think, the Qiu Family instantly became the first sacrifice.

Qiu Xu Hua did not know what to say, as the Qiu Family were the one who instigated the problem, and provoked the enemy. It could only be said that the enemy was too powerful, and with their farsightedness, every step they took was extremely fatal and powerful.

At the start, Qiu Xu Hua thought that the arranger was Southern Alliance's Spirit General Commander, but he quickly realized that it was not Bing, but Tang Tian. In such a tangled and complicated situation, it was not the long distance control, but the capability to adapt to the ordeals.

Qiu Xu Hua laughed bitterly inwardly. Before the Southern Expedition, they had always looked down on the Southern Alliance, and only after the repetitive battles did they gradually recognize the strength of the Southern Alliance's Leader. But they always felt that the leader never had a sense of existence.

Tang Tian's identity was no longer a secret to Temple, to the point that they even knew of his achievements in Heaven's Road. But to them, his achievements in Heaven's Road were nothing, as the fighting capabilities in Heaven's Road were too weak to Qiu Xu Hua and the rest.

But as Qiu Xu Hua sorted out the network of the entire situation, he realized in sorrow that Honorable Martial Continent had already lost the hope to win. He realized that the Southern Alliance, the organisation that did not seem to have a leader, was

actually far more powerful than anything. Just with this leader, they had changed the entire situation, There's actually such a capable man in this world.

Suddenly, he thought about the nickname that Temple's information had on Tang Tian, the Godlike Young Lad.

Truly, there are only wrong names, but never a wrong nickname.

The situation in Saint Continent had not ended, but Qiu Xu Hua had a premonition that the Godlike Young Lad would be the ultimate victor. Qiu Xu Hua firmly believed that Temple still did not know what monster they were up against.

He knew that he and the Qiu Family no longer had the qualifications to wait for the Saint Continent to uncover this enigma.

He needed to hand over his and his family's fate before anything else.

Chapter 936 – Tang Tian's Gains

Tang Tian's body was already at an extreme, and was not inferior to any of the legends of history. His invincible body was the foundation of the Awakened God Armor, and his control over it became more and more outstanding, which further proved the point.

Compared to his perfect body, his refinement of his spirit had not reached the same level.

His current soul training was the glasslike mental state. The Glasslike mental state was extremely unique, it allowed him to penetrate through everything in a cool and calm state. But compared to his monstrous and invincible body, it was still lacking.

In fact, back in Heaven's Road, Tang Tian had spent a considerable amount of time and effort towards tempering his martial spirit. But because of the Gemini Constellation, he and Little Fool shared one body, thus his spirit and soul was completely different from ordinary people. When Little Fool had split from him, their soul was split into two, and he never fully recovered from the trauma, thus his spirit and soul had never been able to catch up with the growth of his flesh body.

Inside the Sword Cyclone Tempest formed by the Hollowfied Energy, Tang Tian's glasslike mental state was shattered by the sword auras.

It caused indescribable pain in him, his body was perfectly unharmed, but the pain seemed to come from the deepest part of his mind, and seemed as though it had spread throughout his entire body, he was unable to hide or escape from it. The pain from the trauma of his senses caused Tang Tian to be unable to think, and if one looked carefully, one would notice that Tang Tian's eyes had lost its focus and light.

At the start, the pain of the cuts made him feel like a fish that was being sliced up into big pieces, then into smaller pieces, and into even smaller pieces. But very quickly, the pain transformed, and he felt as though his vitality was like a rock being filed and grinded.

It was another kind of pain, which grinded at his corners, then filed, and occasionally, his consciousness would pause for a moment. He had a misconception that he was expanding along with the cyclone. He knew that it was a misconception, as his body was completely unharmed, and he knew he was still frantically attacking the Emulated Laws.

He felt as though he was swimming away from his body, and became a spectator, “watching” himself move faster than lightning, and every Emulated Laws was unable to escape. But the pain felt extremely clear, and the intensity increased multiple folds, and he kept thinking that he was turning into ashes.

Instead, the packs of swords that revolved at high speeds, screaming and shrieking around him, was nothing to him.

He did not burn into ashes, regardless of how painful it was, regardless of how many times he was cut or sliced, he did not turn into ashes, even when he felt that his glasslike mental state had already turned into fine sand.

But the sword auras never had the intention to stop, and continued to shatter the sand into even finer pieces.

The pain persisted with no end, Tang Tian felt as though he was falling deeper and deeper inside the cruel sea of Hell, oh, most of the time, it just felt like sinking.

From his alternate point of view, his own body looked as though it could never get tired, not only was his movements getting faster, but he never lost altitude, and like a perfect killing machine, provided that his mouth never released those heart wrenching wails.

He endured the pain while admiring his heroism, the sword tempest cyclones screams were not inferior to his own screams, the two completely different feelings from his alternate view and being in his own body mixed together, it was an unusual contradiction.

Tang Tian, in his alternate view, was still able to observe Ah Xin and the others.

Xiao Ran was in the best state, she was growing the fastest. She had the purest thoughts, as a Spirit General, this talent was brought forward from when she was alive, her talent was outstanding, which helped her growth. Her body was congealing into a solid form endlessly. The Hollowfied Energy congealed a fleshly body that was no different from an ordinary person, but the glossy and sparkling layer of luster, made the body look like crystal, and was extremely breathtaking. The Zanbato in her hand was also transforming, it became even longer and thinner, becoming even more proportionate, the pitch black blade body had an extremely hard tactile, and also had a pure layer of luster.

Ah Xin was in a good state, his body was also congealing, but he was slightly slower than Xiao Ran. Eh? Tang Tian noticed the Undying Sword in Ah Xin's hand, whenever the Hollowfied Energy got close to the Undying Sword, they would immediately shatter and transform into a faint mist that was absorbed by the sword itself. The Undying Sword was like a dry sponge frantically absorbing the Hollowfied Energy around.

Tang Tian could sense the transformation within the Undying Sword, and countless of auras being birthed within the Undying Sword.

The amount of Hollowfied Energy that the Undying Sword was absorbing far surpassed the amount that Ah Xin and Xiao Ran were absorbing added together.

Thinking about that point, Tang Tian's consciousness suddenly

trembled, his entire body turned light, as though an invisible chain inside his body was completely shattered, and he felt extremely light. The pain in him disappeared, and a new joy surged up uncontrollably.

In that moment, Tang Tian who managed to calm down realized that his own glasslike mental state had transformed into what seemed like a cloud, a mass of candyfloss. When the Hollowfied Energy Sword auras swept through it, aside from a slight ripple, he did not receive any harm.

Tang Tian was enlightened, his glasslike mental state was shattered so finely that it was even smaller than grit, and the sword auras could not shatter it further.

It was an indescribable sensation, a brand new sensation. He could feel that his body had become much lighter, and he could feel that his soul had gone through an irreversible transformation. He did not know whether it was a good or bad thing, but from the current look of it, it was still good.

Suddenly, he felt extremely thirsty, and subconsciously opened his mouth to take a breath.

Whoosh!

A large amount of Hollowfied Energy transformed into a stream and surged into his mouth. The Hollowfied Energy that he sucked in were like water droplets entering a sand dune, they instantly entered Tang Tian's body, as though he was eating cotton candy.

An indescribable joy surged from the deepest part of Tang Tian's soul.

The glasslike mental state that had turned into a mass of cotton candy was like a dried sponge that greedily absorbed in the Hollowfied Energy. Not only was the thirst being resolved, it became even more intense, Tang Tian absorbed as though his life depended on it, the quantity of the Hollowfied Energy he took in

looked like mist surging into his body, that was absorbed by the sponge.

Time crawled by slowly, but the glasslike cotton candy did not show any signs of satisfaction.

Tang Tian did not know how long it was, when suddenly, the speed of the cotton candy devouring slowed down, the cotton candy seemed to be filled, and was extremely heavy. Right at that moment, a drop of water dropped out from the cotton candy.

Plop!

It sounded like a water droplet hitting the floor inside a cave.

Tang Tian's body jolted, the drop of water that left the cotton candy had transformed into a regiment of mist that spread through every corner of Tang Tian's body.

Tang Tian felt as if his entire dry desert like body was being nourished by rain, and an even stronger and intense sense of joy spread through his entire body. Tang Tian felt that his body had become extremely light, he knew it was a misconception, his body was already close to perfection without any internal injuries.

It was his soul being nourished.

As expected, he saw a faint illusory figure that had appeared within his body.

The drop of water that emerged from the cotton candy turned into mist and dissipated into the illusory figure. He then realized that the figure had multiple dimmed spots, and he knew that those were wounds. The Gemini Constellation had twin souls, and both were connected to each other, if they were separated, they would definitely sustain injuries.

A soul's injury is extremely hard to treat, much harder than treating a Spirit General. Spirit Generals did not have flesh bodies, thus they had less to fear. But a live person's soul and flesh body were as one, and are incapable of separating. Whether be it

Heaven's Road or Sacred Saint Galaxy, souls was an unknown territory, and no one could say that they had truly pried through the secrets to a soul.

It was Tang Tian's first time seeing his own soul.

The sensation of his soul being moisturized was completely different from the joy he felt before. He felt that his body had become even more free, as though his body was a glass covered with dust, but the moisture had smeared a bit of the dust away, and he could sense his state of mind gaining even more clarity. It was like a dark house that had opened its windows, and allowed sun to enter, revealing the things inside the house.

Many things that he had difficulty understanding in the past came to him naturally, like how canals are formed where waters naturally flow, he gained a flash of understanding.

His body and soul were a complete one, and Tang Tian's heart gained a comprehension.

Unknowingly, his soul had been healed, and with a thought, the cotton candy stopped absorbing the Hollowfied Energy. Tang Tian's gains were huge, which greatly surprised him. His original intent had been to help Ah Xin, Xiao Ran and the rest, but who would have known that he was the one who had gained the most benefit. Many things that he had difficulty understanding in the past were all completely comprehended by him.

The Hollowfied Energy was in truth a part required to construct a soul, and was a unique form of energy.

After he had treated his soul, he did not continue absorbing the Hollowfied Energy like Xiao Ran and the rest. They were able to benefit from the huge quantity of Hollowfied Energy because they had no restrictions of a flesh body. Tang Tian was unable to do so, his soul and body were one, and if the soul was too strong, it would break the equilibrium between the two.

Once the soul and flesh body were not in sync, there will be even more problems.

Even so, since my soul cannot increase in “Weight”, I can improve its “Quality”, I believe, this is the dao of a human’s path to cultivating and training.

Ordinary things were useless to souls ,even the Whirlpool Sword Spirit Tempering Technique that he had used in the past, if it were ordinary sword auras, they would had been useless to him. It was because of the Hollowfied Energy that Tang Tian was able to affect his soul.

This was the best place for Tang Tian to temper his soul, and there would never be any place better. Where else would have such endless Hollowfied Energy? Even if my soul gets injured while being tempered with, I can restore it immediately, with that, he had now worries on holding back.

Without hesitation, Tang Tian started to temper his just restored soul, although he had to once again experience the pain, but the rewards that came with it far outweighed the pain.

Furthermore, Tang Tian had decided to refine the cotton candy in him, oh, no, it is the shattered glass like mental state.

The endless Hollowfied Energy allowed him to try out various methods. What other place was a better testing ground?

Suddenly, Tang Tian who was filled with fighting spirit felt that the Sword Cyclone Tempest was Heaven.

I have to thank the Great Clan Elder.....oh no, that doesn’t seem right, this is terrible! Although they aren’t my citizens, but they are also lives.

Then, I will do all I can, to take revenge for all of you!

By getting rid of the Great Clan Elder!

Chapter 937 – Jia Ya Held Captive

The cloud of riddles around Saint Continent had yet to dissipate, many people stood by the sidelines to watch, awaiting for the dust to settle.

Like Gou Cheng WenDao in the Shang Continent, and Jia Ya who was garrisoned in Wei Ye Guan Continent. Jia Ya had to thank the large army of Savage Continent for that, without them, he would had never been able to leave the Saint Continent. Standing at the top yielded unlimited views, but if one stood at the wrong side, then he would be consigned to eternal damnation. That was the huge risk that one had to take note of if they were in Jia Ya's position.

The risk was one of the reason. He did not need to take the risk to increase his own contributions.

What he was more unwilling to do was to fight against his former friends.

Regardless of which side he took, some of his friends would definitely be in the opposing faction.

He could not face against a situation where familiar faces laid beneath his feet....

Everyone had long gotten used to the hooting from the Savage Continent's large army outside. Even the soldiers who were initially in panic all got used to it and got back to usual. The Savage Continent's large army tried conducting various sieges a couple of times, and even found a few tribe guides but were still defeated.

Jia Ya had to admit that Mu Zhi Xia had built up Wei Ye Guan Continent extremely well. It was as though Mu Zhi Xia had considered all points, and the hard work he had placed through the decades was truly surprising.

Out of the few generals, Jia Ya respected Mu Zhi Xia the most.

The rest had their own outstanding qualities, the relative superiority between their fighting strengths were hard to differentiate, but there were no one as pure as Mu Zhi Xia. Mu Zhi Xia was like an old generation general, and was a pure military man.

He had never participated in any battles, and over the course of the decades, he took the defensive position at the frontiers, his conduct was simple, he treated his soldiers like his sons, and suffered the same sufferings with his soldiers. Regardless of how one looked at it, he was the model example of a military man.

I wonder how Mu Zhi Xia is now, Jia Ya became worried.

He also knew of Mu Zhi Xia's affairs in infiltrating Savage Continent, but as a conservative person, Jia Ya felt that it was too dangerous. But he also trusted Mu Zhi Xia's judgement, Mu Zhi Xia was a resolute and grounded man, and was the most outstanding out of the five of them. Furthermore, he had stayed in the Wei Ye Guan Continent for a few decades, and was much more familiar with Savage Continent compared to himself. Mu Zhi Xia would definitely have his reasons and certainty for being able to make such a call.

There was no doubt towards Mu Zhi Xia's care and concern towards his soldiers, and would never do anything that required them to sacrifice themselves.

In the period of time that he had been in Wei Ye Guan Continent, Jia Ya was able to clearly feel the deep marks Mu Zhi Xia had left behind. The guards that stayed behind were constantly talking about Master Mu Zhi Xia, and all of the respect that they had for him came from the bottom of their hearts. Any disrespectful gossip about Mu Zhi Xia would incite an agitated reaction from them. Usually in such a situation, they would beat up the other parties, but never ran away from the punishments or denied the responsibilities when accepting the military punishments. The army discipline had become their instinct, that showed the

influence that Mu Zhi Xia had.

Everytime Jia Ya saw those soldiers, he would feel admiration. Mu Zhi Xia had spent 50 years building up his army, which made Jia Ya gap in amazement. The quality of the soldiers was something he could never find in any other armies.

Even when Mu Zhi Xia was not around, they continued to train as per usual. They were able to tolerate the loneliness, and never skived and chit chat. They had tight discipline and intense pride, and were always united.

No Generals or leaders could ever dislike such soldiers. Jia Ya felt ashamed, he had an indifferent character, or in other words, lazy. He could not perform like Mu Zhi Xia, to place all of his focus and attention on the soldiers.

On that, I can't compare to Mu Zhi Xia.

Eh, now that Honorable Martial Continent is unstable, would it be better if Mu Zhi Xia was around.

But after that, he laughed at his own naivety, Even if Mu Zhi Xia is around, so what? Regardless be it Temple or the Families, they treat us military generals as blades. What can an old General at the frontlines do to chance the situation? Will the Great Clan Elder listen to him? Or will the Families listen to him?

After this crisis, there's no point even if I were to retreat.

Jia Ya felt somewhat enthusiastic and dry, and took up the wine goblet and drank.

He was not an alcoholic, and only drank before sleep to aid him in rest. Due to his recent dampened mood, he drank more than usual. He was not worried about defense, where even a few important posts were handled by the soldiers who were left behind by Mu Zhi Xia. They stuck to it, because they did not receive any orders from Mu Zhi Xia to change positions.

Jia Ya had advised them a few times, but did not continue to

persist. Mu Zhi Xia Army's soldiers were more familiar with the defense, and they were much more cautious and more responsible. They were the ones to have discovered the sieges from the Savage Continent tribes. They were used to being extremely cautious and careful, furthermore, they were unlike Jia Ya's own soldiers who harbored anger towards the harsh environments of Wei Ye Guan Continent.

Other general's soldiers were more trustworthy than his own, causing Jia Ya to be unhappy for a period of time, of course, it was unhappiness towards himself.

There was a reason why Jia Ya did not persist, because he did not believe that he would stay in Wei Ye Guan Continent for long. Mu Zhi Xia will most probably come back soon, I am only here to stabilize the situation, and have no need to be forceful towards Mu Zhi Xia's army.

Gradually, Jia Ya became tipsy, he thought about his youth, and how heroic they were. The Honorable Martial Continent of the past was extremely united, and all of them were focused on expanding, to unify Sacred Saint Galaxy.

Those times, how wonderful they are.

Faint sounds of battles could be heard outside, along with his subordinates shouting.

Ambush from the Savage Continent people?

He immediately became sober and stood up, but before he could even move, a stranger rushed in. Jia Ya's face changed, How could the enemy even know where I sleep? His first thought was that there was a mole, but when he saw the man in the lead of the group, his pupils instantly constricted.

The group of men surrounded him with weapons on hand.

Jia Ya calmed down, he looked at the man in the lead, and spoke indifferently: "Ming Hai, I never thought that it would be you

guys, Mu Zhi Xia surrendered to the Savage Continent?”

He recognized the few in the lead, they were capable generals under Mu Zhi Xia, and when so many of them had appeared at the same time, his first reaction was that Mu Zhi Xia had surrendered to the enemy. This thought made panick slightly, Mu Zhi Xia surrendered to the enemy? How is that possible?

If not for Ming Hai and the rest surrounding him, just this thought alone made him feel that it was blasphemy against Mu Zhi Xia.

“Surrender? How can Master surrender?” Ming Hai laughed tragically: “Master died.”

Seeing Ming Hai’s tragic smile, Jia Ya felt a bone chilling sense. He knew that Mu Zhi Xia’s soldiers were all extremely tenacious and strong willed, he had never expected that he would ever see such an expression on their faces, and subconsciously blurted out: “How did he die?”

“Temple killed him!” Ming Hai spoke through gritted teeth, his expression was sinister, as tears just fell. All of the old subordinates under Mu Zhi Xia all were tearing up while clenching their teeth.

“Temple killed him?” Jia Ya was dumbstruck, he had thought of all possible answers, but never thought it would be this. He forced a smile: “How can Temple ever kill Mu Zhi Xia? That’s really unreasonable. You guys better not cheat me with such words.”

When he said that, he noticed a group of unfamiliar people around Ming Hai.

Old Tang looked at Jia Ya and laughed, but did not say anything.

Ming Hai shook his head: “No one can cheat us. Master died in front of us, and it was Master who told us that.”

Mu Zhi Xia said it himself? Jia Ya frowned, the answer was once again out of his expectation, What is going on?

Ming Hai suddenly asked: “What’s the situation at the Saint Continent now?”

Jia Ya who was trying to think casually spoke out: “The Saint Continent was sealed by the Holy Flames recently, I too am unaware of what is going on inside.”

Before he could even react, Ming Hai and the rest screamed and cried, tears flowed down their faces. Previously, they still harbored a thread of hope in their hearts, as what their Master had said was truly too shocking. But when they heard from Jia Ya that Saint Continent was sealed with Holy Flames, like lightning, it struck down onto the remaining bit of hope left in them.

“What’s wrong with all of you?” Jia Ya stood up, he looked at Ming Hai and the rest who were crying, and for some reason, the sense of unease in his heart grew even more.

“Dead, they are all dead, our families are all dead.” Ming Hai cried and spoke: “Master was burnt by the Holy Flames, anyone who had trained in the Holy Flames in Saint Continent will all die. Temple needs their Holy Flame....”

Jia Ya’s face was first of disbelief, but suddenly, he recalled the cryptic words that Mu Zhi Xia had said to him before, and a few rumors of Temple, and his face turned pale white.

He spoke with a trembling voice: “You said everyone in the Saint Continent? As long as they trained in the Holy Flames?”

Ming Hai wiped the tears in his eyes and spoke up: “That’s right! Master said that Temple wants to create Spirit Generals, thus they need a lot of Holy Flames. Thus, they have always been promoting the Holy Flames technique, and if they were to encounter a unique situation, Temple would....”

Jia Ya’s face turned whiter and whiter, and his body trembled uncontrollably.

He had stayed in Saint Continent for a long time, all of his family

members were all in Saint Continent, thus if what Ming Hai said was true....Jia Ya's eyes turned black, and he almost fainted.

He muttered to himself: "No way, Great Clan Elder is not that crazy, he will not dare to do that, isn't that basically suicide? Great Clan Elder is intelligent, how can he do such a foolish thing? It isn't like this, there should be some other reason for the Holy Flames...."

He wanted to convince himself, but his voice trembled more and more, at the end, he was already gasping, and then, he lost control of his emotions, and started to cry along with Ming Hai and the rest.

Old Tang and the Old Commander looked at Jia Ya, Ming Hai and the rest in sympathy, they sighed, they did not know how to console them.

Unknowingly, even though they had succeeded in infiltrating and occupying Wei Ye Guan Continent, as they watched the powerful and hard willed men crying, the two of them did not find joy in the victory. Such a calamity in the world was truly sorrowful.

But regardless of anything, their last obstruction to Saint Continent was gone.

Chapter 938 – Full Scale Attack

“Qiu Xu Hua! Qiu Xu Hua! That traitor! That traitor!”

Gou Cheng WenDao screamed so loud that anyone from afar could hear him, but at that point of time, no one dared to stand up. Cliff and the other two were shocked, they had never thought that at such a time, Qiu Xu Hua would actually backstab them.

It was so fatal that they did not have any power to retaliate.

Upon thinking about their rejection to Qiu Xu Hua, all of them were filled with bitterness and regret.

When Gou Cheng WenDao received Qiu Xu Hua’s request to stay, he became very hesitant, and got the three of them over for a discussion. They made a decision after a long discussion, over the internal struggle in the Honorable Martial Continent, that all of them could not avoid. The loss of the Qiu Family did not affect them too much, as long as they maintained silence, they could just come up with an excuse after.

But regardless of all the strategies and possibilities that they had thought of, they had never expected Qiu Xu Hua to want to surrender to the Southern Alliance. The Qiu Family was an Prestigious Family in the Honorable Martial Continent, and even if they had failed, it was not something that could push Qiu Xu Hua to surrender.

In the history of the Honorable Martial Continent, there had never been an instance where the Great General had surrendered, Qiu Xu Hua being the first one. If such news were to be leaked out, it would most like incite a huge wave. It was the lowest that had occurred to Honorable Martial Continent, far more severe than any of the losses they had sustained previously.

Alright, it was no longer the right time for them to consider about the severity of the action, they had to worry about their own

predicament, as they were in the most terrible place.

As they had rejected Qiu Xu Hua's army from entering the Shang Continent, Qiu Xu Hua was forced to station in one of the small continents on the supply route. Qiu Xu Hua's surrendering meant that Gou Cheng WenDao's supply route and path of retreat was completely cut off. And as the Shang Continent was not a good place to defend, and they were not proficient in defense, to them, they were completely trapped.

Their loss of their warships meant that they could not launch a full speed pass by through Qiu Xu Hua. Although the integrity of their armies were more intact than Qiu Xu Hua, But Qiu Xu Hua held the advantage of stopping their path of retreat. Under the lack of warships, trying to launch a full speed pass by Qiu Xu Hua's lock was illogical.

Everyone had worried expressions on their faces and the atmosphere was gloomy.

After a moment, Gou Cheng WenDao calmed down, and shouted for everyone. When they saw Gou Cheng WenDao's appearance, they were all shocked. The master was covered with visible veins and his expression was so gloomy that it looked as though he could produce water (exaggeration).

"Now, tell me, what other ideas do you all have?"

Everyone remained silence.

Gou Cheng WenDao waited for a little while longer, and when no one spoke up, he stood up impatiently and raised his volume: "You guys don't even have one idea?"

Cliff could only stand out: "We can only stay in defense and wait for reinforcements. Our integrity of strength is rather perfect, if we persist, Temple's reinforcements should come."

"Should come?" When Gou Cheng WenDao heard those words, he sneered: "Come your ass! Those idiots are fighting so hard that

it seems as though they are putting their lives on the line. Even if the battle is over, they will be busy clearing up the mess. Support us? Who even remembers us?”

Everyone remained silent, the spirit in their eyes dimmed down. They also knew, that to harbor hope for reinforcements from Temple was simply wishful thinking.

They could not defend, they could not run, that was their current predicament.

The worse thing was resupply. Their entire army's integrity was rather perfect, which meant they required even more resupplies. With the supply route being cut, they could not receive supplies, and the day when their resources were depleted would be their doomsday.

Cliff and the rest were able to guess that the Southern Alliance would just surround them and not fight, and wait for them to exhaust themselves.

Even so, what could they do?”

Initiate an attack? Everyone knew that their fleet of warships that were ambushed upon had greatly affected everyone.

“The Honorable Martial Continent is truly in danger this time.”

Gou Cheng suddenly said those words, causing everyone else to be startled, and no one reacted for a period of time.

It was only after a long silence did everyone react, and their faces turned.

“Master, you meant that Southern Alliance's goal was always our backs?” Cliff, the most stable one, asked.

“If not where else?” Gou Cheng WenDao's eyes flashed with a trace of pain, but he sneered: “You think the Southern Alliance would still place their goal on us? Hehe, wake up, we are all roasted ducks a long time ago. Full force attack, they are going in

at full force! Those idiots, this time, everyone is finished.”

Gou Cheng WenDao muttered while in a daze.

Everyone else turned pale with fright.

Qiu Xu Hua looked at Xie Yu An in front of him, who was in a daze. It was his first time meeting the reputable general, but he had never thought that it would be under such circumstances.

“General Qiu, I was ordered to replace your noble position.”

Xie Yu An spoke extremely politely and calmly without the demeanor of a victor.

Qiu Xu Hua was surprised, any generals who received fame would usually be arrogant, but the Xie Yu An in front of him was extremely reserved and calm. Qiu Xu Hua inwardly praised him, and spoke up cordially: “No problem, I will hand this place over to you, General.”

The Southern Alliance had specially handed the defensive position over to Xie Yu An, who was proficient in defense, with plans to completely choke Gou Cheng WenDao to death.

Qiu Xu Hua knew that Gou Cheng WenDao was finished.

The Honorable Martial Continent’s complete defeat at the frontlines happened so quickly. Even though he had joined the Southern Alliance, Qiu Xu Hua still had a bit of sadness in his heart. They used to think that they were undefeatable, but reality had hit them hard.

This time, even the Honorable Martial Continent’s land was in danger, Qiu Xu Hua sharply sensed that from Southern Alliance’s mobilization of armies, their intent was not just the Shang Continent.

The Southern Alliance had the intention on a full scale attack!

Qiu Xu Hua thought about Tang Tian, who was still inside

Honorable Martial Continent, and when he thought about Tang Tian and Bing's matchless tacit understanding and rapport, his heart trembled.

Suddenly, his mind had a thought, that the deciding final battle between Southern Alliance and Honorable Martial Continent had already begun!

The final and decisive battle's main characters were not the Southern Alliance Armies being mobilized, but Tang Tian, who had covertly entered the Honorable Martial Continent.

The hands in the shadows that had concealed itself for so long, had finally found the opportunity to deal a fatal strike, and did not plan to continue waiting.

The decisive battle, was about to begin.

The Great Clan Elder looked at Sophie, and revealed a satisfied look.

Sophie was completely different, as though she was reborn, the armor on her entire body was enveloped with a layer of gold Holy Flames, the Holy Flames blazed silently, emitting an imposing aura. From head to toe, only her face was not covered by Holy Flames, but a dark gold mask had covered majority of her face, revealing only her dark red eyes.

The dark red eyes revealed indifference, she silently stood in front of Great Clan Elder, the Holy Flames dancing violently. On her forehead, there was a sun pattern which made her look gorgeous and noble.

Sophie's aura was completely different from before, the metamorphosis had completely changed her. The Sophie now was like a cold blooded killing machine, with one order, she would destroy her enemies.

The completely metamorphosed Sophie was the Great Clan

Elder's most perfect creation, and was what he was most satisfied about.

Not only did Sophie's individual strength take a qualitative leap, even her previous life's traits in commanding and strategizing for war was completely preserved. Sophie was the true product that Temple had spent countless of efforts grooming, and very few people knew about it, but the current Five Great Generals had all taught Sophie before. This was why the Great Clan Elder wanted Sophie to hold the post of the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights Commander, because only the Commander had the qualifications of receiving the guidance from the Five Great Generals.

Sophie did not let the Great Clan Elder down, she displayed outstanding talent, and received the recognition of the Five Great Generals. That was also why Sophie was able to sit stably on the position as the Commander of the Banner of Knights with no one doubting her.

The Great Clan Elder had gave everything in grooming Sophie, just for such a situation. He required a military general with extremely high standards, and was also unconditionally loyal to him.

The loyalty of Mu Zhi Xia and the rest could never be compared to Spirit Generals.

Although Twelve Honorable Martial Banner of Knights that had successfully become Spirit Generals, they were inferior to Sophie, but they could hold on posts as the backbone of any Spirit General Armies, and could still do other things.

As for the ordinary Spirit Generals that the Great Clan Elder were grooming, after absorbing a great amount of Holy Flames, their strength was far stronger compared to the Honorable Martial Banner of Knights when they were still alive. More importantly, there were far more of them as compared to the old Banner of Knights.

With Sophie as the outstanding military general, Twelve Honorable Martial Saint Knights as the backbone, and a large number of Spirit General soldiers that obeyed commands and were extremely powerful, it was enough to build an extremely powerful Spirit General Army.

And with the endless Holy Flames, Saint Continent would become the most important land for Temple to groom and restore soldiers.

In the Great Clan Elder's plans, he had never prepared to build up a Spirit General Army so early, but with Du Ke's appearance, it made him push his plans up earlier. Only with that could the Great Clan Elder feel at ease. If we were to say that he previously still had a bit of worries, now, with the Spirit General Army, he was no longer worried. He firmly believed that there were no other armies in the world that could contend against his Spirit General Army.

Even Mu Zhi Xia and the rest were unable to contend with them.

Furthermore, he knew that the seed of Holy Flames inside Mu Zhi Xia's body had been activated, and Mu Zhi Xia was dead.

He felt some regret, Mu Zhi Xia was the Military General that he had always admired, but Mu Zhi Xia had rejected to participate in his plans.

People who could not catch up to him, no matter how outstanding they were, would have to die.

To him, this battle was the most important battle. Success or failure would be on this battle. Once he won Saint Continent, he would win Honorable Martial Continent, and he would win Sacred Saint Galaxy.

With that, no one would be able to stop him, or his Spirit General Army.

The generation that belonged to him, would start from this battle.

He was excited and looked forward to it. After planning for so long, after giving up so much, isn't it to win?

In the sea of Holy Flames, a clear 'pa' sound suddenly came out, like a chicken egg being smashed. This shell crack sound was like a fuse, as countless more cracks came out, and turned into a flood.

The Great Clan Elder's gaze, which was blazing like flames, looked onto the red cocoons that were cracking inside the sea of Holy Flames, and his heart stirred.

My own invincible Spirit General Army is being born.

Chapter 939 – The Realization Before the Decisive Battle

Inside the Sword Tempest Cyclone, Tang Tian's soul was being tempered and purified, and when the last blemish was removed, his body trembled, an indescribable relaxed sensation flooded through his entire body, and made him feel as though he was reborn.

His soul and body had achieved the perfect harmony.

He was in a state that all martial artists chased and dreamt after, and in the history of mankind, the number of people who had attained such a state were countable with one hand. Just based on this, Tang Tian was able to stand alongside any of the legends of history, and laugh arrogantly down at all of the others.

When both were in perfectly harmonized, indescribable realizations flowed into him smoothly.

Tang Tian's experiences and enlightenment all flashed before his eyes in circulation.

His cotton candy that floated silently like a cloud, pervaded with a thread of life, as though something was taking shape inside. The cotton candy started to transform into various forms, and ultimately into the shape of a flame. The glass like mist that was finer than sand transformed into a flame that pulsed slowly.

Every pulse would release a rainbow glass light aura. Within the rainbow glass light aura were uncountable faintly visible black threads that swam inside the light aura.

Tang Tian quietly observed and experienced the sensation. All of the fine black threads were like the Law Threads that formed the Awakened God Armor, and fluctuated and revised themselves inside the glass light. The Awakened Armor on Tang Tian's body was also quietly revising itself, as the rainbow glass light seemed to

be pervading out from the Law Threads onto the Awakened God Armor, turning the Gold Awakened God Armor into various other colors, and emitted a pulse of life.

Inside the glass rainbow light, all of his enlightenments were automatically transforming the Awakened God Armor.

In truth, it was exactly like what Du Ke thought, Tang Tian was a complete tyrant on Laws. He used his pure brute force to force various Law Threads together, to create his Awakened God Armor. Du Ke knew that it looked simple, but in fact, it was extremely difficult. It had a simple logic, but aside from Tang Tian, who else could achieve such a thing?

There was no need to doubt the Awakened God Armor's strength, but it no longer had any space to grow, Tang Tian's control over the Awakened God Armor became stronger, but mostly because of the fact that his body had been greatly strengthened. The Awakened God Armor's Laws were in disorder, and was the greatest reason on its limitation in might.

The glass fire in Tang Tian's body was an inspiration that he got from Temple's Holy Flames. The most unique feature of the Holy Flame was its ability to project Laws. Tang Tian's Glass Fire could not Project Laws, but it could sort and Optimize the Laws. Tang Tian did not wish to walk the path of Hollowfied Energy, although it was extremely powerful and had various uses, but its attribute was solely on the fact that it was "Hollowfied", which was most suitable for Spirit Generals.

Tang Tian's flesh body was tyrannical, and walking on the path of Hollowfied Energy was basically giving up on an advantage to chase an unknown.

What Tang Tian needed was to sort the disorder Law Threads of the Awakened God Armor. With that, his original flaw in using brute force to force the Law Threads together would disappear, and at the same time, he could produce countless of variations,

which was undoubtedly a way to improve the quality of the Awakened God Armor.

At Tang Tian's or Du Ke's level, no one could tell them how to carry on improving or what their dao was.

Du Ke was in a better state, although his dao path was more conventional, and although he had already reached the pinnacle, there were people before him who had achieved it before.

Tang Tian was worse off, as he loved randomness and repeats. Since young, his dao path had varied away from others. For example, the Zero Energy Body. When he had achieved his Zero Energy Body, he fell into an extremely pitiable state. And as for his Awakened God Armor, no one had ever done it before, thus he could never find guidance on it. Why he had not reached this stage earlier was proof.

Turning his glasslike mental state into glass fire was more of coincidence and fate, but there were various aspects that Tang Tian himself had gained enlightenment and thought about.

Tang Tian carefully experienced the quiet transformations of the Awakened God Armor.

His mask became black. It was a black beyond black, blacker than the night sky, and concealed all of the undulations that Tang Tian's body emitted. His eyes gained a thin layer of transparent light lens, it contained various Light Laws, and through this light lens, the world became completely different. Sound, smell, temperature etc, more and more laws activated, and upon activation, they brought about their own advantages, and by adding all of them up, Tang Tian realized that the world had become unfamiliar.

He could see various lights that he could have never seen before, and he could see the Law Threads in the air. The faint smells that he used to smell in the past became extremely apparent, and he could distinguish between the complicated mix of soil and various

other objects. He was able to sense another faint undulation from the other side of Saint Continent.

Huh?

He quickly noticed that there were more undulations in the distance, which was still increasing.

With a thought, countless of complicated information converged to his mind and sorted themselves out, and the scene he “saw” surprised him.

Inside the sea of Holy Flames were many red cocoons, countless of them were cracking, and ever broken cocoons produced a Spirit General. The sea of Holy Flames already had many Spirit Generals, and Tang Tian could roughly see through their history from the remnants of undulations on their bodies.

He hated to admit it, but he respected the Great Clan Elder’s coldness and viciousness.

Then, he “Saw” the Great Clan Elder and Sophie.

The Great Clan Elder seemed to have sensed him, he suddenly raised his head and looked towards his direction. With a snort, countless of Holy Flames exploded and transformed into a gigantic firewall, causing Tang Tian’s eyes to dazzle, and he could no longer see anything.

But that scene was enough to cause Tang Tian to become cautious.

He had initially thought that the fourteen fiery pillars were the Great Clan Elder’s true trump cards, but after witnessing the scene, he finally realized that the Great Clan Elder had actually prepared so many Spirit Generals. A Spirit General Army, the Great Clan Elder wants to use the Holy Flames to build up a Spirit General Army. In the environment of Saint Continent, a Spirit General Army’s fighting strength will greatly increase.

We only have a hundred odd Spirit Generals, which pales in

comparison to them.... It was just a glimpse, but Tang Tian saw that the number of Spirit Generals was at least tens of thousands.

Tang Tian suddenly understood that the next battle would be the most important battle in his life. As long as he defeated the Great Clan Elder, Temple would fall, and the Honorable Martial Continent would self destruct without them needing to attack. He would no longer have enemies in Sacred Saint Galaxy. And the victory in Sacred Saint Galaxy would also allow him to win in Heaven's Road. The resources, warships and armies of Sacred Saint Galaxy was something that Heaven's Road could not fight against. As long as they found the passageway, Tang Tian could bring along a fleet and sweep the Heaven's Road.

As long as he won the next battle, no one could stop him.

The enemies ahead of him were unprecedentedly strong, and the dangers of the battle was unprecedented, but they were unable to hide from it.

It was the decisive battle.

Suddenly, Tang Tian noticed the Undying Sword's transformation.

Inside the Undying Sword, above the calm Ocean of Peace, a mist had pervaded all around.

The mist was so dense that if one person were to stand in it and extended his fingers out, he would not be able to see his fingers. The endless Hollowfied Energy that had been absorbed into the Undying Sword had turned into this dense mist. The Ocean of Peace that had been trapped by the mist churned silently. Wherever the mist met the Ocean, the mist would instantly permeate into the black seawater, and transform into faint silver light scars. Countless of these silver light scars would flash inside the black seawater, like a school of silver fishes swimming actively inside the water.

At the bottom of the ocean where no light could reach, one after another, ethereal figures were standing in formation, all of them were in silence, like Terracotta Soldiers with cracks from head to toe. If there were nothing else, these soldiers would remain in slumber for another century, and await the cycle of the centuries.

One after another, the silver light looked as though they were knocking on the Door of Tie, visiting the still land.

They converged together from all directions, and entered all of the silent figures. The large quantity of silver lights surged into all of the ethereal and cracked figures. As more and more silver light entered them, the cracks on the ethereal figures started to heal. The ethereal figures started to congeal, and looked as though they were become solidified. The outline of their faces became clearer and solid, as they formed mouths, brows, nose.....

It was as though invisible hands were slowly carving real life figures from the ethereal figures.

When the cracks on their bodies were completely restored, when their bodies were completely congealed, they slowly opened their eyes. The eyes that contained immense determination, shot through the clouds of time, and lit up the dark and deadly silent seabed of the Ocean of Peace.

They slowly raised their heads, and their bodies started to float.

When they rose out of the seawater, the mist around them were instantly aroused and surged towards them. The mist that was formed by Hollowfied Energy all entered their bodies, and like dried sponges, they frantically absorbed all of the mist.

Following the absorption of Hollowfied Energy, their bodies continued to congeal at a speed visible to the naked eye, and from an ethereal form, they formed liquid, then formed bones and flesh.

Aside from the grey color skin that all Spirit Generals had, they were no different from a live person. Their eyes that were formed

by the black seawater were completely pitch black, but shone with a gleaming light.

If Ah Xin saw them, he would definitely be shocked.

When their bodies completely congealed, and no mist were able to enter them, they stepped on the water surface, and silently walked inside the mist.

Inside the mist, there was a perfect empty square formation, which had existed unknown to others. The newly birthed soldiers walked into the square formation, and subconsciously walked to a position that was not filled, and remained unmoved.

Inside the pitch black water, more and more ethereal figures opened their eyes. Inside the mist, the lacking square formation was quietly being filled.

Tang Tian quietly watched the scene occurring inside the Undying Sword, his heart filled with emotions.

From the beginning of the transformation, all of the shattered spirits that were never willing to rest in peace, never made any sound. They did not rejoice over their new life, and even with the new life, they never forgot their mission, they never forgot their undying convictions.

They lived to fight.

As more and more shattered spirits under the water were being summoned awake, as the lacking square formation continued to be filled, a powerful killing intent surged into the air.

In the mist that pervaded above the Ocean of Peace, the figures stood as still and disciplined as ten thousand years ago. The Great General standing at the front silently raised the gigantic war flag, and stabbed it into the front of the formation.

Ten thousand years later, the Southern Cross Army war flag was once again being raised up high.

When Tang Tian saw the Southern Cross Army's war flag being raised once again, the fighting intent inside his body instantly combusted.

You have your Spirit General Army, I have mine, let us see, whose army is stronger!

Tang Tian's emotions stirred as the fighting intent within him soared through every corners of his body.

I have been holding back for far too long!

Chapter 940 – Coming Face to Face

Du Ke was admiring and studying the Pillars of Punishment. He was extremely interested in Temple's system. He was not a Spirit General, and the Holy Flames were useless to him, but the logic and creativity behind it gave him places to explore. The Pillars of Punishment were constructed out of Holy Flames, in which the structure were even more complicated and mature, and from many places, he could see vestiges of optimization.

Ji Ze and the rest were extremely respectful towards Du Ke, at such a crucial moment, he could still immerse himself into research. Such a frame of mind was something they could not compete with. They were all extremely anxious towards the decisive battle.

Their enemies were so powerful that it caused them to despair.

Temple's fighting strength was the strongest throughout the Sacred Saint Galaxy. Furthermore, the Great Clan Elder had spent decades planning and building up, using the entire Saint Continent as his tool, he had built up such a powerful foundation.

The powerful Prestigious Families, had crumbled even before the Great Clan Elder had revealed himself, without any form of relation. Sadra and the other Patriarchs that Ji Ze and the rest saw were depressed, and all of them who used to be powerful and wealthy leaders of powerful families, they were now all spent and tired people.

Temple only existed in name, the Great Clan Elder who was hailed as the most powerful had absorbed all of Temple's blood, absorbed all the life and blood of Saint Continent and laid out a powerful and murderous plan, a plan that far surpassed any others of history.

Regardless of it being the Great Clan Elder or the murderous plan that caused others to be in despair, they were all things that

surpassed Ji Ze and the others comprehensible limitations. To them, it was a whole different ball game, and the difficulty and ferocity of the upcoming battle made their hearts anxious.

Du Ke displayed more indifference, he was of a higher realm, and his mental state had received more sharpening and trials than them. The higher realm one was in, the harder it was to improve and upgrade. It was a known fact of the world, and no matter how one persisted, without the right mental state, one would never be able to attain such a realm.

Du Ke was much more optimistic, although the upcoming battle was definitely not easy, as long as they won, no one in Sacred Saint Galaxy would be able to stop them.

The entire Honorable Martial Continent would belong to Tang Tian, his control over the world was something no one would be able to shake. Adding Sin Domain and Heaven's Road respective advantages, Du Ke believed that no one would be able to stop Tang Tian from unifying the Sacred Saint Galaxy.

To the Sin Domain, it was the best thing that could happen to them, they would have more places to live in, and could easily return back to Sacred Saint Galaxy and assimilate themselves in.

But if the Great Clan Elder won, it would be a calamity for the Sin Domain. Different from the old radiant energy, the golden holy flames was completely unhindered by the Sin Domain's environment, and was extremely harmful to Laws. If the Great Clan Elder won, Temple's Knights would definitely ensure the destruction of Sin Domain. If the Great Clan Elder was able to lay his hands on the citizens of Saint Continent, Du Ke did not believe that the Great Clan Elder would let the Sin Domain people go.

Du Ke had already resolved to fight with his life on the line.

Suddenly, he stopped his movements and turned around, He looked at the gigantic Sword Tempest Cyclone in the sky.

The Sword Tempest Cyclone's revolutions had slowed down, although it was a slight difference as compared to before, Du Ke was able to sense it. Noticing Du Ke's movements, everyone stopped whatever they were doing and looked at the Sword Tempest Cyclone.

Bang!

Without any signs, the enormous tempest suddenly crumbled like a snow mountain.

The crumbling cyclone turned into a gray flood that engulfed everything in all directions.

Everyone's faces changed, and without hesitation, they turned and sprinted for their lives.

Chi chi chi!

Inside the surging flood were the countless sword auras, the heart palpitating wails and hisses mixed inside the violent storm caused the world to change color.

Bang bang bang!

Intense explosions occurred one after another, everyone sprinting for their lives could feel the ground beneath their feet trembling, and many of them almost fell. All of them subconsciously turned back to look, and what welcomed them was a majestic scene. The flood of the storm had struck onto the closest Pillar of Punishment.

The lofty Pillar of Punishment crumbled with a loud bang, and a tide of Holy Flames spewed down like molten steel, and also caused the screen of Holy Flames in the sky to tremble.

Everyone was dumbstruck, including Du Ke. He had been studying the Pillars of Punishment and knew how tough they were. The hundreds of Pillars and the screen of Holy Flames was of one system, forming an extremely stable and tough composition.

For one of the pillar to be broken by the Sword Tempest Cyclone showed how powerful the cyclone was!

Suddenly, Du Ke had a sense of regret, Why was I studying the Pillars? I Should had been studying the Sword Tempest Cyclone! I'm wrong, I was wrong.....

Snow City was left in ruins, it was completely destroyed, as though a giant foot had completely trampled on the Snow City, not one of the structures were left standing.

Ah Xin and the rest stood on the ruins in a daze, unclear of what had happened.

When the last Spirit General walked out from the red cocoon, the Great Clan Elder calmed down. To him, his plan was beyond perfect, and all the steps had been completed, even the Holy Flames Spirit General Army that he had planned as a contingency plan was completed.

No one could stop him.

Right at that moment, the fiery screen of Holy Flames in the sky suddenly trembled.

The Great Clan Elder's face turned cold, Someone destroyed one of the Pillars of Punishment! He thought about the person that had spied on him previously, previously, he had tried to think of ways to locate the other party, but he never expected that the other party would reveal their location. As long as he investigated which Pillar of Punishment was destroyed, he would be able to find them.

In a short span of time, the Holy Flames Spirit General Army had completed their formation. Sophie stood at the front, behind her were the Thirteen Saint Knights, and behind them, was an endless large army.

Inside every Spirit General Soldier was an imprint of radiance, in which the leaders could use directly to guide the soldiers. All of the

spirit generals birthed from the countless survivors had gone through the nourishment of Holy Flames, their individual strengths all took qualitative leaps and their fighting strength had become much stronger than before.

In the face of absolute strength, all plots and conspiracies were useless.

The Great Clan Elder remained calm, With Temple as the main battleground, who can stop this invincible wave?

“Let us begin.”

He spoke out indifferently, his palm touched onto one of the Pillar of Punishments, which caused it to tremble. In the face of his supreme determination, the vast power became obedient. The gigantic fiery pillar started to flow with Holy Flames from above, and looked like a candle being melted.

Quickly, the originally tall golden fiery pillar that shot into the clouds transformed into a gigantic golden fireball with a diameter of 1km.

The fireball looked as though it was formed out by an invisible hand, and became flattened as it gradually transformed into a golden flaming door.

Countless of Holy Flames surged from all directions, the flaming door suddenly erupted with golden light, causing people to be unable to see. Inside this golden light, the door gradually opened. As though it could sense the heaviness of the door, the entire Saint Continent started to tremble. All of the Pillars of Punishment shook, and even the fiery screen of Holy Flames in the sky was trembling.

Tang Tian and the rest who had just emerged out of the Sword Tempest Cyclone jumped in fright from the sudden change.

They felt the entire Saint Continent shaking.

“Prepare for battle!” Tang Tian was the first to sense something

amiss, and immediately called out to remind everyone.

Many people were still at a loss, unaware of what was happening. But the companions who were familiar with Tang Tian and trusted him all reacted quickly. Ji Ze and Fu Zheng Zhi immediately led the God Armor Army without hesitation, and appeared at Tang Tian's side.

Xiao Ran who was still in a daze quickly recovered: "Protect the Young Miss!"

The Spirit Generals by her side were all reborn, they were like 120 Fiendgods, all of them emitting extremely cold and powerful killing intents, almost to the point that it caused the air around them to freeze. The air around them flashed, and all of them appeared beside Qian Hui with their calm and composed bearings.

But, Ah Xin looked as though he did not hear Tang Tian's warning, he stared at the Undying sword blankly.

Right at that moment, the Holy Flames above them started to stir, and layers of Holy Flames started to converge above them. In the blink of the eye, it looked as though a sun had formed above them, as countless of Holy Flames had condensed into a flaming ball of light.

At an astonishing rate, the golden ball of light swelled and transformed into a door.

The door gradually opened, and a warm and pure golden light shot out.

A figure wrapped completely with Holy Flames walked out from the door.

Although the body was completely enveloped with flames, Tang Tian was instantly able to recognize the identity of the person, his eyes constricted: "Sophie!"

Sophie heard Tang Tian shouting her name, and glanced at him once before retracting her gaze.

Unified footsteps could be heard from behind the door of light, as Spirit Generals formed a golden flood that streamed out of the door.

Ji Ze and the rest were all dumbstruck, and only Tang Tian remained calm, he had “seen” the birth of the Spirit Generals. He saw Sadra and the other Patriarchs who were beyond shock, and knew that they had completely lost their courage to fight. Even if they could, their strength could not bring help to the battle, and Tang Tian would have to take care of them. He softly ordered Ji Ze to allow Sadra and the rest to bring their families, along with Mace Field Tradings to retreat and leave the battlefield.

After watching Sadra and the rest heave sighs of relief and sprinting away, Tang Tian retracted his gaze.

They were in the decisive battle that was destined to be brutal, aside from one side dying, there could be no other endings for the battle.

Sophie saw Du Ke in the sky. As the only person that could fly from the enemy’s side, he was naturally very striking. Du Ke sensed Sophie’s glare, and his heart instantly felt cold. The female Spirit General’s strength caused him to feel an intense danger.

At the beginning, when the Spirit Generals by Qian Hui’s side saw that the enemies were Spirit Generals as well, their eyes were filled with disdain. But as more and more of them came out from the door, their expressions became serious.

The dense mass of Spirit Generals floated quietly in the sky, their auras were as one, and the might produced from them felt as though there were a series of mountains pressing down onto them.

And when the thirteen Saint Knights stepped out of the ranks, with the auras around their bodies so strong and intense that it felt as though they were becoming tangible, everyone’s expressions changed once more.

The Great Clan Elder was the last to walk out of the door.

When he appeared, an omnipresent power enveloped the entire battlefield. Regardless if it was the Spirit Generals beside Qian Hui who resembled Fiendgods, or the majestic and large Holy Flames Spirit General Army, all of them looked like ants beneath his feet, all so insignificant and negligible.

Chapter 941 – Report for Duty

The Great Clan Elder's appearance brought for a stifling oppression that caused everyone to be in a daze.

In that moment, the world became silent.

Du Ke widened his eyes, the power leaking out of the Great Clan Elder was even stronger than the day that he had met him. He had initially thought that the other party had completed his metamorphosis and his strength was already stabilizing, but he never thought that the enemy would have another breakthrough.

In his eyes, the Great Clan Elder's body was an endless vast body of power compressed into a vortex, containing an endless amount of power. Even though the enemy was standing far from him, but the air within 300m around him seemed to have been "Cleansed", and there were no Law Threads present.

When Du Ke realized that his mental state was wrested out of control, he knew that he had conceded in the formless confrontation. Regardless of how cruel and bloody the enemy's methods were, no matter how fanatical the enemy was, their determination and willpower was truly firm.

The enemy's metamorphosis was too simply, it was through absorbing Holy Flames. But, this seemingly easy method that did not have any techniques was extremely difficult in terms of attaining a said quantity of Holy Flames. For example, how to absorb the vast amount of Holy Flames into the body to allow the Holy Flames to revolve inside the body. Also, the difficulty in controlling the amount of Holy Flames.

The Great Clan Elder was like a powerful and large bomb, if he was by any way inattentive, or if he was not careful and relaxed himself, any slight mistake would incite a terrifying consequence, and the Great Clan Elder would be blasted into ashes by the vast and violent energy.

But the Great Clan Elder remained calm and cool, he was unhurried and steady, his cold and frenzied heart was not only towards the enemies, but even more so to himself.

Filled with shock, Du Ke involuntarily turned his face and looked at Tang Tian. In terms of that, Tang Tian and the Great Clan Elder were extremely similar.

When he realized that he was at the disadvantage, Du Ke immediately thought of Tang Tian.

Tang Tian's expression was calm, he was not shaken by the Great Clan Elder's might, but Du Ke could not see the imposing and powerful aura that Tang Tian used to have, he looked like an ordinary man that had never trained in martial techniques before, he quietly stood there without any aura.

The Great Clan Elder swept his gaze across the entire battlefield, he wanted to see who dared to become his enemy.

When the Great Clan Elder's intense gaze swept past, everyone felt a burning sensation in their bodies, and they were all overwhelmed with shock.

Spirit Generals?

The Great Clan Elder's eyes flickered, he had never expected the enemies to have so many Spirit Generals. Furthermore, they were of extremely high qualities, causing him to be taken aback. The Spirit Generals by the lady's side, although his gaze was oppressive, they never revealed any hint of submitting, but instead they stared back at him.

What powerful Spirit Generals!

His eyes lit up, he had always felt that his Spirit Generals were lacking in something, and now he understood. His own Spirit Generals lacked the ferocious auras. If he somehow obtained these Spirit Generals, he firmly believed that he could create the true invincible Spirit Generals.

These thoughts peaked when he saw Xiao Ran. He was inwardly shocked, This world actually has such a perfect Spirit General! He did not know how Xiao Ran's potential in commanding was, but purely speaking on the body of the Spirit General, Xiao Ran was far more outstanding than Sophie. Sophie's talent was excellent, but ultimately, she had not experienced true battles. Xiao Ran could not compare with Sophie in terms of talent, but she had experienced through the Three Great Armies era, and experienced bitter battles and struggles, after becoming a Spirit General, her consciousness did not fade, and she continued to wage battles in the ancient battlefield. Adding that she enjoyed being the vanguard, she had gone through the baptism of battles, and had become perfect.

On this, all the 120 Spirit Generals by Qian Hui's side were the same, they had all gone through the baptism of countless battles, they were extremely tenacious and strong, although they could feel the Great Clan Elder's overwhelming power, but the willpower that had been tempered through battles allowed them to maintain their ferocious fighting intent.

The Great Clan Elder had spent so much effort to produce his Spirit Generals, but very few satisfied him. When he saw how outstanding the other party's Spirit Generals were, in that instant, his calm state of mind had an undulation.

If the Great Clan Elder was a wolf, his eyes would definitely be lustrous green.

The Great Clan Elder looked at Ah Xin but did not stop at him, the dazed Spirit General did not attract his attention. The pitiful Ah Xin was directly deemed as cannon fodder by the Great Clan Elder.

The Great Clan Elder long knew of Du Ke's existence, thus he was not that surprised, he even smiled towards Du Ke, as though he had met with an old friend. Du Ke was inwardly surprised, This Great Clan Elder is truly not any ordinary man, even as his enemy,

I can't help but recognize his bearing.

The Great Clan Elder looked past Ji Ze and the rest, none of them interested him, in his eyes, they were nothing more than ants.

When his eyes swept to Tang Tian, his body froze, and his pupils suddenly constricted.

Tang Tian noticed the Great Clan Elder's gaze, and suddenly raised his right hand, and lightly waved at the Great Clan Elder, as though he was greeting a familiar person.

Although Tang Tian did not reveal any dangerous aura, the Great Clan Elder was able to recognize that Tang Tian was the one that secretly spied on them. But what surprised him was Tang Tian's current state.

In fact, it was not only the Great Clan Elder that was surprised, even Du Ke was surprised, ultimately, the world would always have a few extraordinary people. The Great Clan Elder was like a dazzling sun, able to engulf everything around him, and in a span of 300m around him, it was an area with no laws. As for Tang Tian, he was the complete opposite, the aura from his body had completely assimilated into the space around him. His existence did not affect the Law Threads around him at all, as though he was air.

The Great Clan Elder's body was like a big ocean compressed into a small body, attaining the apex of "form", while Tan Tian was extremely etherealistic, he did not have any power undulations, and had reached the apex of "hollowfication".

The two were of completely different classification, but they were both strong.

Even Du Ke, a powerful martial artist that had already attained the realm of legends, was moved by their strength, one could only imagine how powerful the two were.

"I never thought that I would meet with the Godlike Young Lad

under such circumstances.” The Great Clan Elder suddenly revealed a smile, and he started reminiscing: “I remember that year when Temple saw the various information from Heaven’s Road, I already felt that young man Tang is not any ordinary man, but I never expected for you to grow to such a state, and become the biggest enemy of my Temple.”

“That’s right, I knew that you wouldn’t know! If I were to be so easily found out by you, how can I defeat you?” Tang Tian said teasingly, and if he had a tail at his butt, his tail would be wagging incessantly.

Du Ke who had a look of admiration and respect had his expression frozen as he stared blankly at Tang Tian. The Great Clan Elder has the bearing of an expert, but Tang Tian? Why are you acting like a fool, you actually destroyed the image of an expert completely.

Why is the difference so big....

The Great Clan Elder’s eyes flashed, and spoke earnestly: “Young man Tang, you are truly a hero, if you are willing to join my Temple, I am willing to give up the position of Great Clan Elder to you, and you will hold the power.”

Tang Tian sneered: “Then you want to turn me into a Spirit General?”

The Great Clan Elder sighed: “Young man, your hatred for me is too deep, that is a pity. Seems like, between the both of us, one of us will have to die.”

Tang Tian stared at the Great Clan Elder, then all of a sudden, he revealed a smile as bright as the sun, but his tone of speech was firm as steel: “If I don’t kill you, how can I face the millions of souls that died unjustly in Saint Continent?”

The Great Clan Elder sighed once more: “It is the world most cruelest thing, nothing can surpass it, but there was a conflict in

beliefs, and it was a need to kill them. Rest easy, when you die, I will turn you into a Spirit General to protect Temple, and let you witness my eternal Temple!”

Tang Tian’s expression looked as foolish: “Eternal? Who gave you that confidence? Today, I will destroy your dogshit of a Temple!”

“Haha!” The Great Clan Elder laughed: “Just by relying on the few of you? Then let me ask you, who gave you your confidence?”

“That’s true.” Tang Tian nodded unexpectedly: “Just by relying on us, getting rid of you isn’t that realistic.”

He suddenly shouted: “Ah Xin!”

Ah Xin turned his blank face over, as though he was still unclear of the situation, his expression was extremely sluggish.

The Great Clan Elder spectated by the side, he glanced at Ah Xin and immediately calmed down. This man is too ordinary, there isn’t anything unique about him.

Everyone’s eyes turned to Ah Xin, they were all confused, Why did Master call for Ah Xin so suddenly? This Ah Xin is truly a strange one, everyone who came out from the cyclone looked to have changed and their individual strengths were all improved, Ah Xin also seemed to have changed, his intellect have disappeared, and become a blockhead....

Ah Xin stared at Tang Tian blankly.

Only Xiao Ran was able to catch a slight difference, she seemed to have seen Ah Xin’s glistening eyes, as though there was something bright within them. For some reason, Xiao Ran’s heart tightened.

“Call everyone out.” Tang Tian shouted, his expression faintly revealing a bit of excitement.

Call everyone out....

Ah Xin suddenly felt his nose and eyes tearing up, he saluted and

puffed up his chest and replied: “Yes sir!”

Time to appear, my comrades!

He stabbed his Undying Sword heavily into the ground, and as though something within him was resonating, he roared out: “Come! My Southern Cross Army!”

Black seawater gushed out from Undying Sword and covered the surface of the ground. The Undying Sword shattered, and transformed into mist, that pervaded above the seawater.

Whoosh, whoosh.

Like chains being dragged on the ground, the sound of orderly footsteps and metal platings colliding with each other converged with the tide.

A uniform formation of Black Armored soldiers stepped on the calm water, as though they had walked out from Hell. Every single soldier had extremely cold expressions with disdain in their eyes, the formation made no other noises. The soldiers walked out from within the midst, as though they were endless. All of them remained calm and collected, but the killing intent around them became tangible black mist that lingered around their bodies. All of their bodies flashed with black luster.

The Great General in the lead had an extremely lofty and huge build, he wielded an extremely large war flag, the pole even thicker than his body, the black war flag as dark as the night sky, with the Southern Cross Army insignia printed on it like dazzling stars.

He plunged the heavy war flag into the soil, causing the ground to tremble and sand to fly. The Black Southern Cross Army Flag fluttered in the wind.

Behind him, the black formation was dead silent.

With his rough and coarse voice that sounded as though it came from ten thousand years ago, it resonated throughout the world.

“Southern Cross Army from the Ocean of Peace, our Spirit
Soldiers that have not died, here to report for duty!”

Chapter 942 – Rebirth, Battle

The gold formation and the black formation faced against each other, it was an extremely obvious contrast.

The gigantic battlefield plunged into an indescribable silence, and only the sound of the flag fluttering in the wind could be heard.

The Great Clan Elder stared at the Black Spirit Generals Army that had suddenly appeared before him in disbelief. Where did these Spirit Generals come from? For the sake of producing my Spirit General Army, I had taken so many lives..

The number of Spirit Generals the enemy had was not inferior to his, and what he could not tolerate more was that the Spirit Generals were of extremely high qualities, and they were far stronger than the Holy Flames Spirit General Army that he made.

How is this possible....

Southern Cross Army? Suddenly, the Great Clan Elder recalled the name, it had once appeared in the reports regarding Heaven's Road. That is an ancient army, and have been destroyed in history, how can there still be so many Spirit Generals existing now? It has been ten thousand years, for a Spirit General to be able to withstand the corrosion of a few centuries is already considered powerful, but ten thousand years, what does that even mean? It is so long that even the Spirit General would want to suicide.

He had never heard of Spirit Generals being able to survive ten thousand years.

But, it's not only that, there was even more!

The Great Clan Elder felt that his knowledge of Spirit Generals was being completely toppled.

The Spirit Generals soldiers were all valiant and fierce, they all emitted spirited battle intents, their formations were strict and

disciplined, and he could see that every single one of them had gone through thousands of battles, as they emitted the bearings of veterans.

When all of these veterans were together, the imposing killing intent they released instantly suppressed his Holy Flames Spirit General Army.

Tang Tian was equally shocked, he knew that the Undying Sword had transformed inside the Sword Tempest Cyclone, and knew that the shattered spirits had once again congealed tangible bodies. But, when he saw them silently walking out of the Undying Sword, how they carried the Southern Cross Army's war flag, his heart was instantly flooded with emotions and grief.

Because he knew how they had gone through the ten thousand years, that every century, they would be like moths flying into flames, shattering themselves into pieces.

The Ocean of Peace, the land that was meant to be a sacred land where their hopes and dreams would be realized, actually became a ten thousand year battlefield.

Without knowing whether our army is alive or dead, how can we rest in peace!

When he saw how the Spirit Generals that had shattered their bones and bodies through the ten thousand years of battles inside the darkest unknown, actually truly leaving the Ocean of Peace with their reconstructed bodies, bringing along their ten thousand years of yearnings and conviction from the choppy ocean, when he saw how they stood under the Southern Cross Army Flag and shouting at the top of their lungs, an indescribable emotion stirred in Tang Tian's heart.

Ah Xin's eyes were flooded with tears, his comrades, his seniors, all of them were standing before him, all of them about to fight alongside with him.

In the name of the Southern Cross Army, we fight!~

Time has already been forsaken by us, we have broken through reality, ten thousand years later, we have once again formed up in the battlefield, we are all able to stand side by side again. The oath we swore that year still exists in our hearts, and the war flag of that year still flutters above us.

Hey, it's been ten thousand years, but we are still us!

Hey, it's been ten thousand years, but the Southern Cross Army is still the Southern Cross Army!

Ah Xin wiped away his tears, and walked to the large man at the front, saluted, and spoke loudly: "Southern Cross Army General Ah Xin, is here to report."

The Great Clan Elder's eyes constricted once again, he knew that he had truly been misled. General Ah Xin, that is the General Ah Xin that wiped out the Qiu Offense Army! He never expected that the dazed Spirit General was actually Ah Xin!

The large man returned the salute, and spoke: "General Sir, according to the rules of the battlefield, you hold the highest authority. But, before anything, General Sir, can you tell us, does the Army still exist?"

In the strict formation, it was the first time restlessness could be seen. The eyes of every soldier all landed on Ah Xin.

"The Army no longer exists." Ah Xin spoke calmly.

The pupils of every single soldier dimmed down, and sobs could be heard from the formation. Many of their bodies started to dim down slightly. Initially, they were all shattered spirits, and never disappeared because of the conviction in their hearts, they bitterly struggled to hold on, and were never destroyed by time. But after hearing that the Army no longer exists, they felt that the persistence through time no longer held meaning. Losing the support of their conviction, their bodies started to melt like ice,

and they started disappearing.

The forthright large man dropped a tear, then cried: “We came late, in the end, we were still late....yes, it’s been ten thousand years....”

Ah Xin’s heart distorted with pain, as though knives had stabbed into him, hearing their self reproach and their grief and disappointment, the scene of how they assaulted like moths flying into flame flashed past his mind, inside the Ocean of Peace, the never ending could be heard “Without knowing whether our army is alive or dead, how can we rest in peace!”

He took a deep breath, then with all of his strength, he roared: “But we are here!”

The soldiers raised their head, and looked at the weak looking General with their blurred eyes.

“We are here, our army is right here!”

Ah Xin stressed every word, making them powerful and resonate, fiercely striking the hearts of the soldiers. They wiped their tears, raised their heads, and puffed up their chests.

Ah Xin’s eyes slowly swept through everyone, and asked loudly: “Ten thousand years have yet to destroy us, Why? Because”

Meeting everyone’s eyes, welcoming the piercing gold light, Ah Xin suddenly thought about Screw, who had screamed inside the coffin for ten thousand years, and thought about the young brat who had brought back the glory of the Mechanical Army from the Army Inheritance, and thought about every single day that everyone had lived inside the Ocean of Peace.

For the first time, his frivolous face had an extremely arrogant and disdainful look, he pointed to everyone, then pointed to his chest, and stressed each word to everyone.

“As long as our Spirits are not extinguished, the Southern Cross Army will never die!”

Bang!

All of the Spirit Generals felt their minds tremble, those words seemed to have directly knocked their brains, and the initial sense of loss and disappointed consciousness suddenly became clear. That's right! General Sir is right! We were late to reinforce the army, and although the army is gone, we still exist, and the responsibility of upholding the glory of our Army has fallen to us!

We, are duty bound!

Who else, but us!

All of the arrogant soldiers, once again started to congeal from their dimmed states, and became even more tangible, and their faces started to glow with unique light auras.

Their surging battle intents surged into the sky, and formed into a dragon that ferociously smashed into the screen of Holy Flames in the sky.

Bang bang bang!

The Screen of Holy Flames in the sky trembled incessantly, and Holy Flames started to pour downwards.

Ah Xin's eyes was filled with determination, he looked at the soldiers who had been rebirthed, his heart filled with the same emotions, and the intense fighting intent combusted in his body. When he shouted those words out, all of the darkness in his heart was swept clean, That's right, so what, even if the army isn't here anymore, they are still here!

With them here, the army is, RIGHT HERE!

Ah Xin unleashed an extremely cold aura from his entire body, it felt as if he had become an unsheathed sword, and was the sharpest sword that no one could ever defend against. He looked at the gold formation in front of him, and the corner of his mouth raised into a disdainful smile, All of you are just pieces of shells pieced together, come, we will let you see what is a real army!

He raised both of his hands and roared.

“Southern Cross Army, advance!”

Rumble rumble.

The black flood slowly advanced forward. They moved at a slow speed, but they emitted an unstoppable momentum, enough to trample all of those who stood against them.

The Great Clan Elder personally watched the entire process, and there were a few times he wanted to interrupt them, but somehow, he was always unable to. The yearnings for their army and their unified identities, are truly shocking. He was envious, How can I produce such loyal subordinates?

He quickly threw that thought to the back of his head, for it was not important at that moment. Only the winner of this battle will have a future.

After experiencing the initial shock, he quickly calmed down. The sudden appearance of a Spirit General Army had broken his deployment, but he was still confident. They were in Saint Continent, the place where Holy Flames was infinite, and was the main battlefield in which he had carefully laid out.

Those who wish to defeat me here, are truly carried away by their wishful thinking.

He smiled with a confident smile, then spoke indifferently: “Sophie, I’ll hand this over to you.”

Sophie bowed towards him, then turned and led the Holy Flames Spirit General Army out. Whoosh, the gold flood advanced forward as well.

The Great Clan Elder revealed a satisfied look, despite the enemy’s strong appearance, Sophie was not affected at all, and his own Spirit Generals knew no fear, thus did not cower in the face of their enemies.

It doesn't matter that they lack in experience, we just have to let them train more, it doesn't matter if they get injured, there is an infinite supply of Holy Flames here to restore them. It doesn't matter if they die, after filtering them out, what will be left of them are elites, we have plenty of cannon fodder.

Furthermore, this is my own battlefield, do they think it is that easy to fight in here?

The Great Clan Elder's eyes flashed with a cold gleam, he moved his fingers nimbly towards the sky, and as though his fingers were connected to the flaming screen of Holy Flames in the air with invisible threads, countless Holy Flames started to fall as raindrops.

The Holy Flames landed on the Holy Flames Spirit General Army, causing their auras to explode, and when the Holy Flames landed on the Southern Cross Army, it immediately decreased their killing intent. With the disruption of the Holy Flames, they became slightly sluggish, and were faintly obstructed.

Instantly, Du Ke stood out with a smile, the Great Clan Elder's technique might had looked powerful in the eyes of others, but to Du Ke, it was a simple move.

He floated towards Ah Xin, and then drew a circle with his palm in the air.

A fluctuation diffused out above the Army, and a faint halo appeared. When the Holy Flames landed on this halo, they were quickly destroyed and broken down. The Holy Flames transformed into small Hollowfied Energy, which replenished Ah Xin and his army. This was what he learnt from Tang Tian's Sword Tempest Cyclone, it was just that his control over Laws was more outstanding, and although his technique did not look powerful as compared to the Sword Tempest Cyclone, it was still able to replenish the soldiers.

The Great Clan Elder looked at Du Ke, but was not that surprised.

Although he and Du Ke merely had a momentary battle, both of them knew of each other's brilliance. But Du Ke was able to use a unique method to transform the Holy Flame's energy still made his eyes light up for a moment.

But to him, controlling the Holy Flames required almost no concentration or power, but how long could Du Ke last?

Your deployment might be of relevance, obviously you have earnestly researched my Holy Flames, but, you think I only have this technique?

The Great Clan Elder sneered.

Beneath, the gold flood and the black flood collided heavily into one another.

The battle instantly reached its climax.

Chapter 943 – The Finale

Right from the start, Tang Tian was completely fixated on the Great Clan Elder, in his eyes, the Great Clan Elder was the most important enemy. He did not intend to decrease the distance between them, for he knew it would raise the Great Clan Elder's caution.

He looked extremely calm, and even when Ah Xin was talking to the Spirit Generals, he placed more than half of his attention on the Great Clan Elder. The intensity of the battle was unprecedented, and Tang Tian's focus had reached a new peak. His abundance of experience nagged at him that the situation of the battle could instantly change at any moment, and an opportunity would arise any moment, usually it was just a fleeting chance, and if he was not focused, he would never be able to catch the opportunities.

When he noticed that the Great Clan Elder's focus was on Ah Xin, he immediately realized that it was an extremely good opportunity.

He secretly looked at Ji Ze and Fu Zheng Zhi, and the God Armor Army quietly moved.

Tang Tian had gained tremendous improvements from the Sword Tempest Cyclone, especially his understanding of laws, in which was an intrinsic upgrade. Tang Tian realized this the moment he connected to the God Armor Army.

In the past, the tactics that he had prepared for the God Armor Army was relatively inflexible and stiff, which was by using various methods to assemble the laws together.

But in the current Tang Tian's eyes, all of the tactics had become extremely crude.

The brand new Awakened God Armor control was tremendously

much stronger than the past, which also allowed Tang Tian's control over the Awakened God Armor to become stronger.

He had prepared Tactic No.9 for the Great Clan Elder, which was the strongest tactic that the God Armor Army had.

The army moved, and Ji Ze's eyes instantly flashed with surprise.

Tactic No.9 was the tactic that they had trained in the most in ordinary times, and he was naturally extremely familiar with it. But this time, the sensation was completely different. Usually, he had to focus extremely hard, on the combination with his comrades. The superpositioning of the different energies was the most difficult part of Tactic No.9. If there was even a discrepancy of a millisecond in any of the procedure, it could greatly diminish the might of the technique. For the sake of being extremely accurate, all of them had suffered greatly, to become extremely familiar with the tactic. But even so, they had to be extremely focused when using the Tactic, and any slip up could lead to a failure.

But this time, Ji Ze felt as though there was an invisible hand quietly pushing the process, and making it feel extremely natural in executing the Tactic. What surprised him even more was that the power of his Laws were continuously flowing without the need for him to control. If not for his unconditional trust in Tang Tian, he would have become fearful of it.

How much stronger has Master's control improved?

He felt that it was inconceivable.

But, the energy that he was imbuing in was far more than what the ordinary Tactic No.9 needed. ~So much energy, what is Master going to use it for? Not all tactics could become better with more energy, not only would it become worse, but it might lead to other complications.

The excess energy capacity could lead to the destruction of the

tactic.

But, he was dumbstruck. He watched as the different energy attributes superimpose together endlessly. The entire process flowed like a stream of water without any hint of slowing down. If not for Ji Ze being extremely familiar with all the energy, he would have definitely thought that the different energy all came from the same source, and were extremely matching. But in the usual training, he knew that all the different energy attributes were extremely violent. If they allowed them to superimpose randomly, they would explode.

All of a sudden, the regular method that they had trained in the Tactic was undermined, Ji Ze was completely dumbstruck by Tang Tian's inconceivable control over the tactic. It was not only Ji Ze, the entire God Armor Army was shocked by Tang Tian's sudden take in the tactic.

Ji Ze suddenly frowned, he felt that he had overlooked on something.

~Hold up!~

Ji Ze's eyes lit up, he knew what he had overlooked, the energy undulation! He actually did not sense any energy undulation! He almost screamed out in shock, Impossible! There are so many different energies superimposing on each other, how can there be no energy undulation?

But, he was unable to sense the energy undulation!

Every single member felt their power of the laws being pulled out, and all of it converged onto Tang Tian's fingertip, forming a black little arrow. This arrow was completely different from the arrow formed from the usual Tactic No.9, the usual Tactic No.9's arrow formed would be sparkling and translucent, with dark red blood veins and ice lines, and light granules would be visible inside the dark red blood veins. The completely black arrow on his finger made everyone extremely curious.

They had never seen the new Tactic No.9 before, and had never seen such an arrow.

Tang Tian did not unleash the attack immediately, and waited patiently for an opportunity.

The Great Clan Elder's focus was completely absorbed by the battle between the two large scale armies, there were too many soldiers, both armies were extreme elites, which was something rarely seen.

Both parties had extremely outstanding military generals, They were all able to use unique methods to directly give commands to their subordinates, and the armies were as nimble as their limbs. Various eye dazzling tactics were being coordinated, with the opposing side using their own tactics to counter, and the tempo of the battlefield was extremely high.

Sophie started to fall at the disadvantage, which was not a surprise to the Great Clan Elder, but the disadvantage had occurred so early that it made him dissatisfied, he felt that Sophie was obviously not enough to support his own military general system.

There was no doubt for Sophie's talent, and her capabilities itself were outstanding, but she had a few weaknesses. For example, her ability to lead was strong, but she had a pitiful experience in command. One, her experience in real battle was too little, second, her experience in commanding a large army was too few. From the start, Sophie always only held the position as the Commander of the Banner of Knights. The Banner of Knights were a small group of few hundred men, and Sophie never interacted with a large army of a few million men.

As for her opponent Ah Xin, regardless of experience in real battles or commanding a large army for battles, he had plenty of experience, and was extremely crafty. Ah Xin was able to capture every flaw in the moves that Sophie made, and slowly but surely,

the gap between the two widened.

In addition, the quality of the soldiers also had a huge difference.

In terms of strength or experience, the Holy Flames Spirit General Army's soldiers were unable to compare with the Spirit Generals of the Southern Cross Army. Even though they had the support of the Holy Flames, they were being suppressed to the point that they could not raise their heads.

Seems like I have to use that move.

The Great Clan Elder shook his head inwardly, after spending so much effort, the situation is still being overwhelmed by the enemy, seems like I need to find more capable Military Generals. Sophie is still too immature, and cannot hold such a huge responsibility.

Luckily, I still have some moves to deploy, the Great Clan Elder smiled, and the radiant mark on his forehead suddenly glowed bright.

Bang!

In the midst of the battle, one of soldier of the Holy Flame Army suddenly exploded, and transformed into gold Holy Flames that had a smear of dark red color, making it extremely bewitching. One of the Southern Cross Army Spirit General who was close to him was infected by the dark red color.

This soldier instantly froze as the red Holy Flames permeated into his body.

A faint radiant mark suddenly flickered on the soldier's forehead, and his face revealed a look of struggle. The fiery screen of Holy Flames in the sky shot a regiment of Holy Flames down, which coiled around the soldier, instantly dying blood red. The Holy Flame started to grow, and a cocoon started to form around the soldier.

Bang bang bang, one after another, many Holy FLame Spirit

Generals exploded, and transformed into dark red holy flames.

In the blink of the eye, the battlefield was died with a bewitching dark red.

The Holy Flames in the sky started to turn vigorous, and Holy Flames started to surge from all directions.

Ah Xin's eyes turned bloodshot, he never expected for the Great Clan Elder to actually use his own soldiers as weapons. Since the day he joined the army, everyone treated him with care and concern, and after he became a Military General, he passed down this love to his subordinates. He had never thought that there would actually be a man so vicious to use his own subordinates as weapons to attack his enemies.

In the Great Clan Elder's eyes, all of them were not soldiers, in his heart, anyone could be sacrificed.

“Use the Ocean of Peace!”

Tang Tian's reminder sounded in his ears, causing Ah Xin to instantly become alert, struggling free from the rage, he felt ashamed, for he had allowed the anger to take over him, which should had never happened.

Ah Xin immediately realized the benefits of Tang Tian's advise, and roared: “Undying Sword!”

Hummmmmmm, a sword hum sounded out. The Undying Sword flew into Ah Xin's hand, and the pitch black Ocean of Peace started to surge out from beneath Ah Xin's feet. The black seawater contained a familiar aura, which immediately caused the soldiers who were infected by the dark red Holy Flames to calm down, and the radiant marks on their foreheads gradually dimmed down.

Du Ke suddenly appeared behind the Great Clan Elder like a ghost, but the Great Clan Elder had already sensed him, and with a palm and a weird angle, he smashed behind him.

Du Ke who had just appeared met with the palm, his face

changed as he activated his Law Domain with full force.

Bang!

The immense explosion caused everyone on the battlefield to be shocked.

The terrifying and matchless power caused Du Ke's body to tremble, his eyes rolled back, and before he could even react, boom, he was smashed straight down to the ground, which formed a large pit.

Everyone was frightened by the Great Clan Elder's palm, and all of them stopped momentarily.

The faces of Ji Ze and the rest turned white, That's Du Ke, Sin Domain's strongest martial artist, he was actually smashed into the ground with one palm, that....

The Great Clan Elder looked at Tang Tian once, his face cynical, he ignored Tang Tian once again and raised his right arm. A pillar of Holy Flames descended down from the sky, and enveloped his hand, connecting him and the fiery screen of Holy Flames.

The radiant mark on the Great Clan Elder's forehead became brighter, and the power emitting from his body exploded.

The dark red Holy Flames that was initially being devoured by the Ocean of Peace exploded with light aura, and once again held the upper hand, and the blood red cocoons started to form once again.

Du Ke struggled and climbed out of the pit, then wiped the blood off the corner of his mouth. It was the first time he was placed in such a terrible situation, he was struck heavily, and his Law Domain actually cracked under that one violent attack. The Great Clan Elder was truly powerful, as though his body contained a violent ocean. It was Du Ke's first time experiencing such a powerful attack.

But if you think that you can defeat me that easily, you're wrong.

Qian Hui glanced at Tang Tian. She understood him too well. For him to not take action for such a long time, It isn't his style, it means Big Brother Tian is waiting for an opportunity.

Although no one knows what killing technique Big Brother Tian has prepared for Great Clan Elder, I know that he is waiting for an opportunity.

Qian Hui's gaze turned back to the battlefield, her mind was always at a calm, even with the Great Clan Elder's vicious methods, she did not become agitated at all. The entire battlefield was extremely clear in her eyes, and where the most explosions occurred was where the most intense regions were.

For the sake of infecting more soldiers, the Great Clan Elder had intentionally stretched the perimeter. Being so, their formation was flattened.

"Xiao Ran, you will cut in from there, and then launch an attack from the left side, as long as you can break an opening, hand it over to Ah Xin, he will make good use of it. The enemy's formation will tilt to Ah Xin's favor, you can try to make a roundabout and cut in from Sophie's back."

She ordered Xiao Ran softly, her tone was calm and sure, which assured Xiao Ran. She had no way of participating in the battle, if she were to lead a force herself, everyone had to divert attention to take care of her.

"Behind Sophie?" Xiao Ran did not understand, Isn't the defence there extremely strong?

"Yes!" Qian Hui replied: "I noticed Sophie's habit, she likes to protect the flanks, it is a very orthodox response. So she will definitely use everything to fight against Ah Xin, she wants to bear the Great Clan Elder's pressure. So this is your chance, you will cut in from behind Sophie, and then attack the Great Clan Elder. Remember, one move, you only have one move. Do not go close, do not hold back, once you finish this one attack, you have to retreat

immediately, without hesitation. Do you remember all of that?”

“Yes!” Xiao Ran nodded her head, other people might hesitate towards her order, but Xiao Ran would never do it.

Young Miss is the Goddess of War that had defeated Ah Xin!

Xiao Ran was eager: “I’m off then, Young Miss!”

She was already impatient, the frontlines were already at its climax, but she had not participated in the battle, which was a torture for her.

“Pay attention to safety.” Qian Hui added.

Tang Tian’s expression remained the same, he had seen the Great Clan elder’s cynical look. However, the game between the two had just begun, it was as though the Great Clan Elder knew that Tang Tian was waiting for the opportunity to give a fatal blow, and the Great Clan Elder had already noticed Tang Tian’s Killing Technique.

But, The Great Clan Elder still thought that he was in control of the entire situation, as long as he paid attention to Tang Tian’s sneak attack. The only person capable of posing a threat was him.

And Tang Tian also recognized his own advantage, because he had his companions that he believed in.

Xiao Ran’s assault did not attract the Great Clan Elder’s eyes, he was more focused on the capture of the enemy’s spirit generals and defending against Tang Tian. He was long drooling for the Spirit Generals, and did not hesitate to sacrifice his own Spirit Generals in an attempt to seize control over the enemy’s Spirit Generals. What surprised him was that the power of the Ocean of Peace was stronger than he had imagined, and he had to put even more effort in suppressing the Ocean of Peace.

Xiao Ran’s assault was extremely smooth, her assaulting ability was far stronger than Ah Xin, furthermore, the Spirit Generals by her side were far stronger than any of the Spirit Generals of the

Southern Cross Army.

As expected, everything went according to what Qian Hui said.

Seeing that Sophie's formation was being tilted by Ah Xin, Xiao Ran brought her few Spirit Generals and quietly took a roundabout quietly.

Across the entire battlefield, Xiao Ran was like a thief, where no one noticed her. Sophie's opponent was Ah Xin, The Great Clan Elder was cautious against Tang Tian, and he believed that aside from Tang Tian, only Du Ke posed a slight threat, as for Xiao Ran, the Great Clan Elder viewed her as the perfect spoils of war.

Only when Xiao Ran and her Spirit Generals suddenly cut behind Sophie and got close to the Great Clan Elder did he take notice of her.

Before any of them could react, Xiao Ran took a deep breath and bellowed: "KILL!"

She raised the Zanbato in her hand, and with all of her strength, she slashed downwards!

Behind her, the 120 Spirit Generals slashed down as well.

The 120 blade auras entered Xiao Ran's blade aura, and like a crescent moon, it shot at the Great Clan Elder.

If Tang Yi was around, he would definitely have recognized the technique. It was his most proficient Heavy Lance Charge. But in Xiao Ran's hand, this Heavy Lance Charge did not contain any fireworks.

After releasing the blade aura, Xiao Ran remembered the Young Miss' reminder, and without even looking, she turned tail and sprinted away.

The Great Clan Elder's expression became gloomy, he naturally did not place such an attack in his eyes. To him, Xiao Ran and them were like ants. But who would had known that the ants

would actually take the initiative to attack him, and even got so close to him. It was also coincidentally at the crucial time where he wanted to take full control over the battlefield, Damn it!

Sophie, you trash!

The Great Clan Elder suppressed the rage in his heart, he saw the cold crescent blade aura, and his pupils instantly layered with a thin ice.

He raised his right hand, and was prepared to make a move, when the scene before him dazzled.

It was Du Ke who had climbed out of the pit, and he, who looked as though he was dying, actually made his move.

The Great Clan Elder felt as though he was being isolated into a grotesque and variegated world, the world before him dazzled with neon rainbow colors, and his ears buzzed as all sorts of strange sounds entered his ears.

The Great Clan Elder's face changed, An illusory world!

How could Du Ke, a man who had gained enlightenment on Law Domains, be a fool? After sustaining the injury, he immediately understood that he had made a mistake in his plan, the Great Clan Elder had immense strength in his body, and if they were to go head to head, he would definitely lose out.

If that's the case, why don't I strike at his weak point?

The Great Clan Elder might possess terrifying strength, but his attainments on Laws were not high.

Furthermore, Du Ke knew that he need not use any wounding attacks, he only needed to cause the Great Clan Elder to be distracted.

Du Ke immediately thought of illusions, which was one of the most used methods for beginners. Du Ke's standard was at the top, the illusions he knew was not limited to light and vision, but sound

laws and spatial laws.

The Great Clan Elder was immediately struck by the technique.

There was no defense at all. The Great Clan Elders was surprised and subconsciously went to block Xiao Ran's swift attack, and used the golden Holy Flames to engulfing the illusory world.

At this time, Tang Tian finally started working. His actions were quick and no one could see it clearly.

The Great Clan Elder stopped abruptly. There was a bright mark on his forehead and he had a shockingly large hole in his hand.

The Great Clan Elder couldn't move as the Holy Flames around his right arm shattered.

Bang bang bang!

The cocoons coiling around the soldiers started to explode.

Sophie was frozen, the radiant mark on her forehead suddenly dazzled with light aura, while the radiant mark on the other soldiers of the Holy Flames Spirit General Army started to increase in intensity, as though they were all in a trance, they remained unmoved.

Tang Tian's face suddenly changed: "Run away!"

Ah Xin, Du Ke and the rest on the battlefield immediately reacted as they turned and ran.

The Great Clan Elder never expected himself to fall for an illusion, But you guys can never win.....

Sensing that the Holy Flames inside his body were losing control, he wanted to laugh fanatically, but no sound came out.

Bang!

Dazzling light auras blossomed from everyone, Sophie and the other soldiers were unable to run from the dazzling light aura that devoured them.

Tang Tian's face changed, without hesitation, he opened up his arms, countless of Law Threads intercrossed in the air and grew like vines, transforming into a wall of Laws. His Awakened God Armor was utilized to its maximum, the transparent light auras from the laws lit up, and the wall of light blocked their backs.

Qian Hui who was sprinting away frantically suddenly sensed something in her heart, and turned back. When she saw the arms that were spread opened inside the wall of light, Tang Tian who resembled the moth inside amber, her mind froze, and all the blood in her face receded instantly.

“NOOOOOOOOOO.....”

A heart wrenching scream sounded out, and the endless light aura engulfed everything.

Five years later.

Star Wind City had already become the hub connecting Heaven's Road and the Sacred Saint Galaxy, and the area of the city was expanded by many times. But the true glory of Star Wind City stemmed from the fact that the favouritism from the Queen. Ever since the Queen had unified the Sacred Saint Galaxy and Heaven's Road as one, she had moved to reside in Star Wind City.

It was said that when she was young, the Queen had stayed in Star Wind City, and had developed deep feelings for the land.

The Queen's side palace was located on the mountain peak outside the old Star Wind City, where the scenery was plain, and no one knew why the Queen adored the place.

Qian Hui sat on a rock with her hands supporting her chin as she looked into the distance. Every night in the past, he would train his fundamental martial techniques here. Before she left Star Wind City, she would be seated like that, watching him train.

She sat there quietly, and realized that night had covered the sky,

and stood up to return to her side palace.

After finishing her dinner, as usual, she arrived at the Ice room.

Inside the ice room laid an ice coffin, where a young man laid quietly.

Qian Hui quietly looked at the familiar face. Du Ke said that within his body remained a trace of life, and she had always been waiting for him.

As usual, she gently spoke: “Big Brother Tian, when will you wake up? It’s your birthday tomorrow, all of them will be coming over. You haven’t seen them for so many years, I think everyone has become very strong, so you better quickly wake up. If not, Little Xu Xu will definitely say that he can beat you into a pulp tomorrow....”

A faint voice that contained anger sounded out from within the ice coffin.

“Beat me into a pulp? I haven’t beat him up for the past few days, and he dares to be so rampant? No, that can’t do it, I cannot tolerate his arrogance....”

Qian Hui became affixed, as though she was in a body binding spell.

Table of Contents

[Undeclared God of War](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 901 - Why?](#)

[Chapter 902 - The Light of the Past, Will Shine for the Present You](#)

[Chapter 903 - Sophie's Return](#)

[Chapter 904 - Ah Xin Requests to Battle](#)

[Chapter 905 - Powerful Ah Xin](#)

[Chapter 906 - Battle formation, Clear Autumn Chains](#)

[Chapter 907 - Sanctuary Palace](#)

[Chapter 908 - We Will Exist Together Forever in The Battlefield, We Will Always Fight Together](#)

[Chapter 909 - To Come Fast](#)

[Chapter 910 - Winner and Loser](#)

[Chapter 911 - Respective Bargaining Chips](#)

[Chapter 912 - Temple in Apparent Decline](#)

[Chapter 913 - Respective Conspiracies](#)

[Chapter 914 - Pillar of Punishment](#)

[Chapter 915 - The Crazy Gambler](#)

[Chapter 916 - Saint Continent Prison](#)

[Chapter 917 - A Sense](#)

[Chapter 918 - The Most Cruel Affair](#)

[Chapter 919 - Collapsed With a Loud Bang](#)

[Chapter 920 - Secret](#)

[Chapter 921 - Revenge!](#)

[Chapter 922 - Looking for a Breakthrough](#)

[Chapter 923 - Predicament](#)

[Chapter 924 – Nascent Spirit Generals](#)

[Chapter 925 – The Secret of the Holy Flame](#)

[Chapter 926 – Piercing Through The Window Pane](#)

[Chapter 927 – Activation](#)

[Chapter 928 – Parting](#)

[Chapter 929 – Pressure, Idea, Hole](#)

[Chapter 930 – Too Foolish](#)

[Chapter 931 – Du Ke's Fury](#)

[Chapter 932 – The Huo Family’s Decision \[2 in 1\]](#)

[Chapter 933 – First Probe](#)

[Chapter 934 – Du Ke’s Response](#)

[Chapter 935 – Qiu Xu Hua’s Choice](#)

[Chapter 936 – Tang Tian’s Gains](#)

[Chapter 937 – Jia Ya Held Captive](#)

[Chapter 938 – Full Scale Attack](#)

[Chapter 939 – The Realization Before the Decisive Battle](#)

[Chapter 940 – Coming Face to Face](#)

[Chapter 941 – Report for Duty](#)

[Chapter 942 – Rebirth, Battle](#)

[Chapter 943 – The Finale](#)